





# REALMS IN THE FIRMAMENT

BOOK 07

*Fengling Tianxia*

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

# Realms In The Firmament

(天域苍穹)

by

## Fengling Tianxia

(风凌天下)

# Synopsis

---

Ye Xiao was a superior cultivator in his previous life. The three factions of the realm kill millions of people every time they attempt to seize cultivation resources. Wealthy towns turn to wastelands in just a single night. They cover up their crime with an assertion that the towns were suffering from pestilence and disasters.

They forcibly hold all the resources for cultivation, monopolize all valuable practice materials, and keep outsiders from cultivating so that only their three factions could cultivate in the realm. Ye Xiao declared war against the three factions in retaliation for their actions. He fought alone and ended up dying in vain. However, he is reborn into the mortal body of a 16-year-old boy. He will use the powers he cultivated in his last life and slaughter his way back into the Realm. The story begins!

# Copyright

---

All rights reserved.

English Translation by Rain @ [Qidian International](#)

Translation Edits by Chrissy / Arch @ [Qidian International](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

# Chapter 601: Last Joy; Take Charge!

---

Guan Zhengwen used his last energy to open up his eyes. As he spoke, he spat out blood. "But... My family... They... They.... Know nothing..."

"Oh you are begging? So you want me to spare them because you said they know nothing?" Ye Xiao mercilessly spoke, "Do you know what happened to Minister Li's family after he died? His families were tortured till death. Two baby girls were missing... Do you know what happened to Lord Liang's family after you killed him? They were all..."

Ye Xiao coldly asked, "So only you have a family? Only your family is innocent? What about them? They are all innocent! You killed them! You killed their beloved ones!"

Guan Zhengwen's eyes turned gloomy.

"I won't hurt your family myself. Like you said, they know nothing. They didn't do anything vile. However, I won't save them if somebody else want them dead. They are your family, and they have lived quite a good time because of what you did. They should also bear what will happen to them in the future thanks to you!" Ye Xiao blandly said, "The bright career in the future you have been dreaming... that is never going to happen. I am quite sure about this."

Guan Zhengwen moaned in pain and said, "Than... Thanks..."

And then he stopped breathing.

Apparently, he cut off the energy flow of himself with the last bit of energy.

Ye Xiao looked at his dead body and felt that something deep hidden inside his heart was melting.

That must be... the grievance in the previous Ye Xiao's heart.

[Does it mean Guan Zhengwen was the person who poisoned Ye Xiao back then?]

Ye Xiao took in a long breath.

He looked at his own hands.

He thought that it would take him a lot of effort to defeat Guan Zhengwen, but it turned out so easy.

That surprising upgrade helped a lot.

Ye Xiao was level eight of Sky Origin Stage, but in fact, he should be capable enough to fight against cultivators under level three of Spirit Origin Stage in Qing-Yun Realm.

Guan Zhengwen was at the top of level nine of Sky Origin Stage.

He was not as strong as Ning Biluo, Boundless Saint and Zhao Pingtian, but he was after all as powerful as a royalty-recruited martial artist. However, the fight was completely a one-sided win!

He was absolutely weaker than Ye Xiao, and his martial art was also not any top ranged martial art!

Guan Zhengwen had never learned any top ranged martial art! The only valuable one was the Bone Melting Palm, and he taught himself that.

Surely, it was already quite a marvelous martial art in the Land of Han-Yang. However, it was not a martial art method that could improve his cultivation capability thoroughly!

"What a shame. Such a man could easily become a great figure... if he was more righteous and had a good master. However, he chose a wrong path and messed with somebody he couldn't afford to."

Ye Xiao sighed while looking at the dead body.

His white clothes flashed in the fog before vanishing.

The night was bound to be a sleepless night.

Especially for the Crown Prince's Palace...

Under the influence of alcohol, Crown Prince felt himself particularly tough. When he faced the Crown Princess, his wife, he even acted arrogantly like a real big man.

After all, before that, he had been acting like a little girl facing his wife! He should have been used to it after all these years.

However, suddenly, he felt that things were different!

It was such a great feeling for him.

Mu Clan had been seriously damaged by the two great sects. They had totally lost their power.

They had turned hostile to the five clans, so they were now under suppression of the five clans. They were still living, but they would be vanished sooner or later. They had no power to stir any disturbance at all, not to mention offer the Crown Prince anything.

That was why Crown Princess became much less important to him.

In fact, they had always been using each other for all those years. Since Mu Clan had lost power, the certain thing to happen was that the Crown Prince would vent the grievances he endured in this marriage. For now, it was surely a winner subduing a loser!

That was exactly what Crown Prince was doing. He was at his prime moment. After the feast was finished, he returned to the

bedroom and pushed Crown Princess on the bed. He was drunk and rude. He brutally ripped off her clothes, not caring what she would think. He just raised it up and pushed it in hard into her!

Crown Princess was in fact stronger than him in martial art. However, she didn't dare to resist him. She could only endure it quietly.

Mu Clan was collapsing, and she needed Crown Prince's support. Things have totally turned around now.

Crown Princess had her own plan knowing that her clan was bound to fall. The five clans were united and had chosen the right side in the battle earlier. They were barely damaged, and they even had supreme dan beads. They had also built good relation with Ling-Bao Hall. They were absolutely going to improve greatly soon.

However, Mu Clan had been seriously damaged by the two great sects. Lots of men were killed, and they lost the supreme dan and became enemies to the union of the five clans. They were so much weaker than their enemies. That was why they were collapsing at the moment!

Crown Prince was the last hope of Mu Clan. Also, he was the only person who could keep her alive. In fact, Crown Prince's power didn't mean much for Mu Clan, however, it meant so much for her alone.

At least, that was the reality in the Kingdom of Chen. Second

Prince's entire family was wiped out. Third Prince was too weak. The king was seriously ill and could die at any second. Crown Prince was the only possible person who could take over the throne and become the next king.

...

# Chapter 602: Disgusting!

---

When Crown Prince became king, she would become the Queen! When that day came, she wouldn't need to care if Mu Clan was still powerful or not. She didn't need it anymore!

Thus, the only thing she needed to do now was to peacefully get along with the Crown Prince for the next period of time. She had to make Crown Prince happy no matter how difficult it was. She would endure any insulting ways he liked, and she would just give him whatever she could!

Crown Prince crazily rode on Crown Princess's soft body. For so many years, he only managed to feel like a real man for several days on her body!

Crown Princess was trying everything to match up with him. All the suppression she made to him was now the source of his excitement! Staring at the woman who had always been insufferably arrogant moaning under his legs, he felt so good and pleased!

However, at this moment, somewhere else...

The Royal House.

The king stared at the numbers that were highlighted and the witnesses that martial artists captured at night. His face was totally green.

He couldn't trust Feng Zhiling after just what he said, even though he strongly felt that he should. He needed to be cautious.

When he returned to the royal house, he started to check the records and started the research.

However, after all it was done, he actually found... that everything Feng Zhiling said was true!

Such things were always fragile. The king wanted to dig it out, so it would definitely be dug deep. Everything was clear, and all results led to a much more unforgivable and contemptible truth than what Feng Zhiling told him.

The officials who worked for Crown Prince had never thought that things would end up like that, not even in their dreams. When they were pushed down in front of the king's seat, they didn't even know what was happening.

When they heard the question of the king, they were totally broken.

"Your majesty..." Master Sun worriedly looked at the king's face.

Nobody could understand the king more than these masters.

His second son was recently killed and he couldn't avenge him.

His eldest son had been planning on treason. Two miserable things happened in the same few days.

It wasn't difficult to imagine how bad he felt as a father at this moment.

The king was seriously ill. In fact, these masters had injected lots of spiritual qi many times into the king's body to stabilize his health condition. If not, the king should have died long ago. Now, he must be in a worst situation. They knew he was unable to handle this!

However, they were in for a surprise. The king took a breath heavily. His face was getting more and more gloomy, but he didn't seem unhealthy at all. Instead, he was getting spirited up.

He stared at those officials who kneeled in front of him.

He had so much to say now.

Something like 'I am so disappointed'.

'I have been so nice to you all. I am always proud that you are all loyal men...'

'For so many years, we get along so well with each other. How can you do this to me, after what I have done for you, with my trust on you...'

He wanted to say something like that.

He wanted to, but he didn't.

At last, he just waved his hand and spoke in a low voice, "Get them to the dungeon!"

"Your majesty! Your majesty..."

The officials exclaimed in tears while being dragged off by the guards.

Looking at the water stains on the floor, the king was silent for a while. It was stains of the tears of the officials and the piss that they made because they were terrified.

"Your majesty... Crown Prince... How?" Master Sun cautiously asked.

If he had another choice, he really didn't want to ask. He didn't think the king could handle more shocks, however, he had to ask, because it was his duty!

"Do not mention that animal again!" The king spoke in a gloomy voice, "Bring those b\*tches over now!"

The people in the court were confused. They knew what the king

would like to do, but they didn't know why the king looked so well dealing with all these things. He didn't puke blood or pass out. In fact, he was so energetic!

They didn't think that was normal!

...

Three Royal Concubines were brought to the king's bedroom. When they arrived, what they saw was a group of guards and a strange smell in the air. They knew they had done something wrong, so they were extremely terrified.

The king's face was dark. He glanced at the faces of the concubines and spoke only a few words, "You are so disgusting!"

"Disgusting!" He repeated the word.

One concubine fell down right there, trembling on the floor.

The other two showed pale faces and rattled eyes. However, they were still holding it, "Your majesty, why so?"

The king stared at them with the fire of anger burning in the eyes. "You don't know? Well, let me give you a hint."

He took in a deep breath and said, "... Crown Prince!"

As he said it, the two concubines passed out right there.

Things were clear.

Disgusting!

Crown Prince!

What else could make the king talk like that?

Their secret was revealed!

The king finally confirmed it when he saw the reaction of the three women. He closed his eyes, his temples trembling. After a while, he gritted with his teeth and said, "Get them out! Kill them all! Kill their entire clans!"

...

At dawn.

A bunch of officials lined up in the court to hand in their reports. However, the gate suddenly opened up and it was not the eunuch walking out as usual. Instead, it was a troop of royal guards stepping out!

The guards looked straight forward and marched out. Horns

sounded at the same time from different places. Horse steps resounded everywhere.

The troops were gone.

The officials were terrified, but they didn't know what exactly was happening.

...

# Chapter 603: Thunder Up

---

The officials were confused. [What's happening? It is still early in the morning. Is there any accident? Maybe... It was said the king is ill, and he may not have lots days to live. Did he just...]

The Crown Prince had the same thought. He looked confused, but was quite happy in mind. If his father truly died, he would become the new king. He surely was happy. [Gods are blessing me. Once I sit on the throne, I am king!]

He was still having his sweet dream, because he didn't know what happened the previous night. The masters captured those officials secretly and rapidly!

Not even a chicken or a dog escaped.

Masters around the king were all in top levels of Sky Origin Stage. They were totally powerful in ordinary people's eyes. One night was long enough for them to do so many things!

"What's going on?"

"I don't know. Anything big happening?"

"I didn't hear anything about this. Why?"

Somebody frowned and asked Crown Prince, "Your highness, do

you know what is happening?"

Crown Prince's face turned pale. He didn't seem so vigorous anymore. He wasn't a fool after all. After thinking deeper for a few minutes, he realized there was something wrong about it. There were a few officials absent in the court. The absent officials were exactly those who were working for him. If one or two of them were missing, he might still try to believe that they were sick or something else. However, all the officials who worked for him were missing. Apparently, they were all in trouble!

They all got in trouble at the same time... That meant...

Crown Prince's heart started to beat heavily. His face was turning pale and gloomy. He shook his head and blankly spoke, "I don't know!"

He was turning more and more depressed though.

His heart felt like falling deeper and deeper down to the abyss.

It was like a nightmare to him. The most horrible nightmare was happening to him. He tried to wake up but he just couldn't.

A sweet dream turned into a nightmare. Heavens and hell. What a huge difference!

"The king announces morning court!"

The eunuch's familiar voice sounded. Crown Prince's two legs were trembling. He knew he should get in, but he actually just couldn't move his feet.

His feet were so heavy like they were rooted in the ground.

He tried so hard but couldn't lift it.

An official behind him noticed it, so he got over to hold the Crown Prince. As he touched Crown Prince, he found his hands were wet and cold. Crown Prince's sweat drenched his clothes.

[What is wrong? Is Crown Prince sick?]

"Your highness? You highness?" He was scared, so he called out to Crown Prince.

"I am fine." Crown Prince was back to himself. He tried to smile and slowly walk into the main hall.

"Your highness, if you don't feel well, why not just ask for leave and take some rest back home. Don't hide your sickness for fear of treatment." The official was concerned.

Crown Prince's face was pale. He didn't seem sober at all. He didn't even hear what people said to him.

In the main hall.

The king's sharp eyes stared at the Crown Prince who was being held by an official. His eyes were sharp and cold, but in his heart, there were complex feelings.

The king, Chen Xuantian, truly had many questions hidden in the heart.

He just wanted to ask his own son, why!

Why would he deceive his father!

At this moment, officials were on their positions. It was awkwardly silent. It was so depressing that people felt suffocated.

They all felt something was wrong.

Nobody dared to talk first. They just tried to hold their breath.

These were all experienced and cunning officials. When they felt something was wrong in the court, they would lower their heads and stay silent.

Anybody who dared to step out and say anything stupid, something like 'what a lovely day'... he would probably die instantly.

'What a lovely day' was actually a good opening to break the awkward situation though...

The king leaned back to the throne slightly. His eyes were closing up.

Prime Minister Zuo and a few other old officials were enlightened. [Something serious is going to happen!]

The king's simple moves and the lazy and casual facial expression all meant something serious would happen!

The old officials had been there for dozens of years. They all knew the king so well. They all sensed the danger this time, so they all tried to stay out of it!

Even if a needle was stabbed deep into their butts, they wouldn't make a sound.

"Prime Minister Zuo!" the king blandly spoke.

Prime Minister Zuo felt like there were ten thousand alpacas running over across his heart. [God damn it! I just want to play dead now! Why do I have to be the first? Did I forget to pray for blessing before I went out in the morning? Bloody bad days! This is not a good sign!]

He stepped forward one step and answered, "Yes, your majesty!"

"Let me ask you, what is your responsibility?" the king spoke in a gloomy voice.

Zuo quivered and said, "Your majesty, I am here to assist your majesty and supervise the officials, support..."

"Hmm." the king interrupted him when he just started to talk.

Prime Minister Zuo sighed with relief in his heart.

[Hmm. I guess it must have something to do with supervising officials. It won't connect to me, right? Maybe another young stupid guy pissed the king off again?]

[Well, it should be no worse than ineffective supervision. That should be fine...]

The king continued, "Supervise the officials. Well said! Zuo Longcheng, let me ask you. The case about Second Prince. What do you think about official supervision?"

"I... I am guilty!" Prime Minister Zuo kneeled down immediately. However, he felt relieved in the heart.

[So this is it... Hmm... No more than half a year salary deduction.]

...

# Chapter 604: Inconceivable!

---

[Such a huge event. Even you, the king, had absolutely no idea. How could I know about it? I really didn't know it, and even if I knew it, how could I dig on that? He was your son! He was supported by many powerful figures! The Second Prince! How could I supervise him? How?]

[You question me on that? Really?]

"Guilty? That was quick!" The king stared at Prime Minister Zuo who was on his knees. He blandly spoke, "Let me ask you. How many people have you gotten charged for bribery?"

"I am guilty." Prime Minister Zuo stayed on the floor. He felt something was wrong... [Second Prince was already an old case... Why is he digging on even older cases?]

He couldn't help sweating on the forehead.

It was truly not easy to answer. Old officials were all loyal and had been following the king for decades.

"Do you know, among the officials you should supervise, somebody is planning treason?" The king's deep voice was like a thunder striking in Minister Zuo's heart.

At the same time, a sound of something hitting the floor sounded.

Crown Prince suddenly sat on the floor without reason.

The king didn't look at him at all. He just kept looking at Prime Minister Zuo.

Nobody dared to make a sound. They saw Crown Prince fall on the floor, but nobody stepped over. They tried to move away from him. They were like baby ducks fearing lightning strikes.

They were totally astonished.

Prime Minister Zuo was soaked by cold sweat.

Crown Prince was about ten meters to him.

How could he not know?

As a old cunning figure in the court who had been in this place for decades, how could he not know what had been happening?

His heart nearly popped out of his chest.

He only had one thought, [Sky collapsed!]

"I don't. I should die for malfeasance..." When he said so, he didn't really want to die, but he already started to consider it...

He was smart. As Crown Prince acted that way, he could already figure out the truth. If he could do whatever he wanted this moment, he would probably rush to the Crown Prince and beat him up to death! [You are a fxcking Crown Prince! Why do you have to plan any stupid treason?]

[Even I know the king is ill. He is not going to last long! Why can't you just wait for a few more days!]

[Even though you are so stupid and you don't want to wait, can't you just leave me alone! Fxck you all! What the hell do I have to do with this sh\*t...]

"Oh? You don't know? You should die?" The king nodded. "I don't want you to die yet. I want you to tell me, what is the penalty for treason?"

"Family wipe out! Clan extermination! No amnesty!" Sweat came down of Prime Minister Zuo's forehead. His eyes were soaked by sweat too. He didn't even look like the head of the officials in court.

"Hmm. What is the penalty for not fulfilling supervision duty?" the king continued.

Prime Minister Zuo nearly lied to the floor. He said, "I should die over ten thousand times! Please, your majesty, whatever you say!"

The king half closed his eyes and stared at him for a long time. He didn't tell him to stand up or to get back. He just let him stay on the floor.

After a while, he casually said, "Where is my Crown Prince?"

'My Crown Prince' seemed to be full of bloody smell from the king's mouth!

Officials in the court all showed a pale face immediately.

"Fa... Father... Father... I... I am... am here." Crown Prince crawled forward and kneeled on the floor, shaking.

The king's eyes were filled with disdain. He seemed disgusted.

"My son. Raise your head. Let me have a good look at you. I want to look at my son," the king spoke in a deep and cold voice.

"I... wouldn't dare..." Crown Prince kept his head lowered. He didn't dare to look up. He didn't dare to face his father, the king on the throne!

"Wouldn't dare? Hahahaha..." The king laughed in a tragical voice. "Is there anything you wouldn't dare to do in the world? You have done many things that are absolutely unforgivable, and you did them with your own hands! Now, I want you to look at me, and you said you wouldn't dare? How humble! My son. My good son! Great Crown Prince!"

The hall was suddenly silent. Even the sound of a needle hitting the floor could be heard clearly.

Crown Prince only felt his heart beating so fast like his heart had been moved to his head, booming inside.

Every time it beat, it shocked him.

He slowly raised up his head with a pale face. He looked at his father, right in the eyes that were sharp like hawks'.

There was nothing but coldness inside the king's eyes.

"You are my Crown Prince indeed. Beautiful face. Handsome." The King half closed his eyes and blandly spoke, "Let me ask you. Did I take off your position as a Crown Prince? Or did I act like I was going to do it?"

Crown Prince spoke in a quivering voice, "Not... Not really."

"Did I tell you that I am in a bad condition, and I will let you sit on this throne within a few years?"

"You... You did."

"Did I tell you that my body is running down? That I am seriously ill and I won't live long?"

"You d... You did..."

The King's voice became calm. "Such private talk. Such secret. I have never hidden it from you! All kings in history would avoid talking about their own physical conditions, yet I told you everything. I just want you to be a good king after me, and make our kingdom long live in resplendence. That is all!"

Crown Prince got down to the floor. He truly didn't dare to raise his head again.

"I don't understand. You know everything. You know nobody could take over your position as a Crown Prince! You just needed to wait till I die. You know that day is coming soon. You just needed to wait for that day, and you will get the throne. But you still have to plan treason. Why? Answer me!"

The king frowned.

He really didn't understand.

He was a good king with brilliant knowledge, but he really didn't understand why his son would do such a thing, especially when the latter knew the day of his crowning would come soon.

He had never hidden anything from the Crown Prince.

A few years later, even sooner, a few months, Crown Prince would become king for sure!

Why would he choose to commit treason!

The king truly didn't understand!

...

# Chapter 605: The King's Fury!

---

Crown Prince was trembling. His teeth were quivering. and he couldn't manage to say even a word.

The officials in the court all stared at him.

"Say it! Why don't you talk?" The king suddenly shouted like thunder, "Tell me! Why?"

Crown Prince was totally limp and feeble on the floor.

[Second Prince had powerful supports. Second Prince was overwhelming! Father, you like him a lot! I felt in danger...] These were his reasons, but he couldn't say a word of it now.

He didn't dare to.

"You all. Tell me. Why? Who can solve this puzzle for me?" The king looked around the officials, vigorous and domineering.

The officials were all frightened. They all got down on their knees and kowtowed, "We are guilty! We deserve death!"

The King was gasping. He shouted, "Why guilty? Why die? You think I can't put you all on penalty? Minister Zuo! Mei Jianli was your student! Tell me, why did he work with Crown Prince on treason? Give me a reason! Grand Tutor! Qu Wuqi is your son-in-

law. Tell me, why would he betray me? Grand Preceptor! Lan Zhongxin is your student. Tell me!"

The old guys all kneeled on the floor with sweat on their forehead. They were scared the hell out.

They thought only Prime Minister Zuo was in trouble, yet they all were...

What a bad luck...

Prime Minister Zuo complained in his heart. [I have been the chief examiner for so many times in my life. I can't even remember it. Over a dozen for sure. Each time I sat there as the chief examiner, I would have dozens more students. Over a dozen times being the chief examiner, I have a great group of students.]

[How the fxck did I know which of them would commit treason years later?]

[You actually blame me on that? Mei Jianli? Who the hell is Mei Jianli? I barely know that guy! Maybe he said hello to me several times, but I never even answered him!]

Grand Tutor, [My daughter got married fxcking twenty-five years ago. How would I know her husband would commit treason!]

Grant Preceptor Song, [I sat on the chair of chief examiner more frequently than the old Prime Minister Zuo! I have so many

students... Lan Zhongxin... Who the hell is he? Do I know him?]

"Don't tell me anything about guilt and death again! You three! Take the order! Dig this case out thoroughly!" The king stood up and slapped on the table. "Give me a reason why they commit treason! If you fail to give me the answer, you will bear the same charge for treason!"

[What?]

[Is he out of his mind?]

The three old men were stunned. They really didn't know what to say anymore.

[Treason... What more reason does it need?]

"Your majesty... Your majesty..." The three old men were stunned. "I... I really..."

The King stood up in fury and walked down the stage. He didn't stop when he passed the Crown Prince.

Crown Prince saw his father's yellow robe moved over him, and he shouted like a mad man, "Father... Father... Please, I can explain..."

The king finally stopped.

He stood right at the door of the hall, with his back on the court, facing the splendid sunlight. He spoke in a deep voice, "You don't need to say anything! You can only disgust me!"

"I don't want to see you again!"

Crown Prince felt extremely cold.

He knew it now.

His father knew everything about it! He had all the evidence! He must also know the other things which was even more disgusting than committing treason!

Disgusting!

Crown Prince shouted and spat out blood. He passed out on the floor of the court.

The king finished talking. He just ignored Crown Prince and walked out.

At the moment, someone run over to the hall while riding the horse, "Report, your majesty! All convicts are captured! None missing! Your majesty, please place your order!"

The officials in the court felt a chill in their hearts. [What?

Already... captured?]

The king coldly spoke in a deep voice, "Order? What order? They are all traitors or relatives to traitors! Kill them with bludgeons! Throw their bodies to the wild! Wipe out their clans!"

"Your majesty... the... what about... the Mu Clan..."

"Wipe out! No mercy!"

The king swayed his sleeve and left with big strides!

Under the rising sunlight, his shadow on the floor turned even longer while he was walking further. That looked so lonely!

He was solitary!

A king was indeed bound to be solitary!

...

Crown Prince committed treason!

The breaking news was like a windstorm rolling over the entire kingdom!

People all sighed about it. The Kingdom of Chen was truly getting

through a tough time. Troubles came from both outside and inside.

The kingdom was surrounded by enemies from four sides, fighting a war that had thousands of miles long battles. While the four sides were at war, Second Prince's dirty business was revealed and he got his entire family wiped out. After less than five days, Crown Prince's treason was revealed!

Treason!

Unforgivable!

In other words, the king lost two sons within seven days!

Thousands of people in Crown Prince's Palace were killed by bludgeons within one day! No survivors!

Within one night, the Crown Prince's Palace was torn down!

The king's fury was much more fierce and powerful than any other times in the history.

This time, it was murderous and bloody!

If Crown Prince only committed treason, maybe the King would wait till the end of the war before he punished Crown Prince. The kingdom was in danger after all. He didn't need to hurry at all, as his life was extended a great deal.

Second Prince just died and the war is happening in four sides. Even though Crown Prince was ambitious, he wouldn't do anything during this time.

It would only lead to death if he took a rebellion at this special time after all.

However, adultery with the king's concubines aroused the king's unbearable raging fury!

It not only offended his dignity as a king, also dignity as a man!

The king was extremely furious. He didn't care about other things anymore. He just did it.

Kill! Kill! Kill!

Crown Prince would die! Officials who worked for him would die! All that followed him would die!

Whoever loyal to Crown Prince was would all be vanished!

..

When Ye Xiao heard of it, he was stunned!

He knew the king would definitely do something, but he didn't expect it to happen this soon!

...

# Chapter 606: Strange !

---

Ye Xiao thought deeper about it and then understood it immediately.

"Royalty have no relatives indeed. If not for the dan bead I gave him, he wouldn't do this. He would at least wait till the war ends, because he knew he couldn't handle it with his bad physical condition. However, my Reconstruction Dan extended his life for a long time. He should be able to live for a few more decades. The problems now won't be problems by then. He could even just raise another heir... That is his confidence!"

"Maybe when he thought he would die very soon, he would want to leave the kingdom to his own son. He would do anything to keep him alive and teach him well. He would fear that he would lose his life before everything is well set for his son, so his kingdom will fall into chaos. However, now that he can live for decades more and the Crown Prince is threatening his position, he surely won't stand it. It is better to raise another heir. He still has plenty of time after all!"

"The king is indeed wise and conquering. He is a good king with a decisive mind. However, he is just as selfish as all kings in the history. Royalty are cold-blooded!"

Ye Xiao lightly sighed.

...

"What's happening on the battles?" Ye Xiao asked.

"General Ye controls the north. He is waiting for an opportunity to wipe out the Grassland Wolf. Zhan Qianshan and Prince Hua-Yang are in equal powers. Things in the east are stable. It is not possible to defeat the enemy, but it is also unlikely to be defeated. General Lan on the south is holding the position too. His son, Lan Langlang, has changed a lot since he went to the south battle. He stays in the battle to help his father. Father and son fighting side by side, they are nearly invincible!"

The chief of intelligence group knew that Ye Xiao cared about Lan Langlang a lot, so he spent more time on that. As he dug deeper, he found that this foppish young lord really had changed a lot.

He actually played quite a role in the south battle.

The south battle had been the weakest point among the four sides earlier!

Ye Xiao was surprised. "He... actually made contributions there?"

"I heard he is vice general now. Soldiers all love him..." The intelligence chief coughed.

Ye Xiao thought for a while and nodded. "Well that must be true..."

If Lan Langlang didn't really make contributions, General Lan should have beaten him up half to death and thrown him back to the capital. He would never let his son get fake credits. In fact, Lan Langlang should be in a higher position than just a vice general.

Ye Xiao felt happy for him.

He really didn't expect that the most useless one among the three lords in town actually made his own contribution now.

Who would have known that the three lords in town all had their own ways now. Zuo Wuji was likely going to be an official. Lan Langlang would become a figure in the military. Ye Xiao became Feng Zhiling, the Monarch of Ling-Bao Hall who shocked the world! How unexpected fate was!

"Only... the west. Kingdom of Lan-Feng is attacking like tides. Our men have been retreating again and again. The west side is the most dangerous..." The chief said, "It shouldn't end this way considering they are not much powerful than our troops. However, they sent out many superior cultivators and changed the situation... I guess the front line might have already collapsed... In fact, if the rainstorms didn't break the balance and make our men lose the perfect moment to attack, Kingdom of Lan-Feng should have been defeated long ago."

Ye Xiao nodded.

He was sure that his father would control the north.

If Ye Nantian was defeated by those grassland folks, it would be a joke.

If Ye Nantian didn't want to thoroughly wipe out the Grassland Wolf, he should have won the battle long ago!

The east and the south were in deadlock, but nothing to worry about.

Only the west battle...

It was truly a pain in the head.

"Enough for the national affairs. Tell me something about ourselves. Bring a happier topic." Ye Xiao stretched his legs.

"The reward warrant has been spread out to the entire Land of Han-Yang." The chief was spirited. "More than fifty men in the noble families are beheaded. Noble clans in the Kingdom of Tian-Yu and Kingdom of Lan-Feng feel imperiled, but there is nothing they can do to stop it. They fear every movement. They are panicking all the time."

"Some heads are being brought on the way to us..."

"Make sure the bounty is ready. We pay when we get the head. No delays." Ye Xiao nodded and knocked on the table.

"Yes."

"Wan Zhenghao!"

"I am here!"

"This concerns about the future of Ling-Bao Hall. Pay attention. You should take charge of it yourself. No mistakes are allowed."

"Yes, Monarch."

...

When Ye Xiao finished everything in the Ling-Bao Hall and returned to the House of Ye, it was already afternoon. He met Song Jue right there. In fact, Song Jue was waiting for him. The moment he saw Ye Xiao, he humped and said, "Where the hell have you been? Are you addicted to that? Let me tell you something, son. It is not late to mend your way now. Do not become what you were again! If you dare to go out and screw around, I will show you how powerful my fists are!"

Ye Xiao laughed and said, "Haha... I was just hanging around... I didn't do anything bad... Hey... Uncle Song, you know me... Haha..."

And then he sneaked away.

"Wait... You haven't explained those things yet..." Song Jue shouted, but Ye Xiao had entered his own place. "Ahem, Uncle Song... Well... Now I have a lady in my small yard... I don't think it's a good idea to let you in. Look..."

Song Jue was speechless.

"You little prick! How dare you say that to me?" Song Jue cursed.

Ye Xiao was already gone. Song Jue wanted to get in to get him, but then he thought Ye Xiao was right about the lady thing. Maybe he shouldn't get in there, so he just let Ye Xiao go!

"That was close..." Ye Xiao sighed with a long breath. "In my own house, being yelled at by my steward, and I can't really offend him... What a strange young lord I am..."

"Master..." Bing-Er was blushing.

Since that night, Bing-Er realized she had done something wrong.

She seemed to have aroused a beast inside her master...

Everyday when he came back, he would get on her right away like a hungry wolf...

And after that... it was always a few hours of hard work...

Every time they finished, she would be exhausted, and her legs would be too weak to even get off the bed, not to mention cultivating martial art...

The strange thing was that... every time after she was... by her master, she felt something would change inside her body. It seemed there was something hurting her life, but that thing would be reduced every time after the 'work'.

It was some special feeling, indescribable but real.

How could there be such a thing inside her body? Hurting her life? How was that possible?

It was unreasonable, but it existed.

[What is that and why do I have such a feeling?]

...

# Chapter 607: Memory Revival

---

Bing-Er still couldn't understand it.

She knew her thought was against the nature rule, but that feeling did exist inside her.

No matter how she wanted to figure it out, she had to keep it only to herself. She couldn't tell anybody. She didn't dare to.

If she did, she was afraid her master would think her as a sl\*t...

She didn't want him to think that she made up such an excuse to have sex!

Bing-Er blushed. She just kept that secret deep buried in her heart.

"Bing-Er, what is going on with you, girl? Why is your face so red?" Ye Xiao was surprised. He looked at Bing-Er and held her in arms immediately. And then he kissed her small and pretty ears with his warm lips.

After being moistened for many days, Bing-Er had become even more beautiful and gorgeous. If she had been a saintly fairy, she was now combination of a fairy and an elf.

Especially... when she was with Ye Xiao.

After a few days test, Ye Xiao was sure that the ears must be one of the most important places of Bing-Er's body.

Ye Xiao had tried that sweet feeling so many times, and every time he started it from the ears, he never failed. She always loved it.

When he gently blew his warm breath to her ear, Bing-Er would turn weak and soft immediately.

"Master..." Bing-Er moaned. She noticed an indescribable feeling was aroused inside her body. She gasped and said, "Master, something is strange..."

"What thing?" Ye Xiao asked.

"Hmmm..." Bing-Er moaned and tried to handle herself. She grabbed Ye Xiao's hands tight and solemnly spoke, "Please wait... Master."

"Alright. I will wait." Ye Xiao stopped.

Bing-Er took a deep breath and cast an enchanting glance at Ye Xiao. Ye Xiao was nearly aroused and became a thirsty wolf again. Then she said, "Master, it is said... that... that thing between man and woman... and..."

Bing-Er blushed. She only found it so difficult to say than to think in mind.

Ye Xiao held her hand and smiled. "Girl, why don't you finish it? What about the thing between man and woman?" He sounded rather flirty.

Bing-Er tried to concentrate on talking and she solemnly said, "It is said... that it is harmful to the health at some point... Then... Master, don't move... Why... Why do I feel... improved instead? Isn't it... isn't it unbelievable? I heard that there was another saying. Maybe... it looks benefiting, but in fact, it hurts inside the body... Maybe we are harmed already..."

Ye Xiao nearly burst into laughter. "You silly girl! Why do you have to put those all together. Little fool. Ordinary people will get hurt if they do that thing to frequently. However, we are very different people. We are cultivators. We have much more energy in our bodies. Besides... that thing... is the intersection of Yin and Yang, the creation of lives. You are soft as Yin, and I am tough as Yang. We communicate with each other, making the Yin and Yang blended. That means, as long as we do it under restraints... well it should be a good exercise for both you and I. Do you understand it now? Silly girl!"

Bing-Er nodded like she understood it. "I see. It turns out that thing is blending Yin and Yang, softness and toughness..."

She thought, [It must be so. I have been improved a lot, even though I haven't cultivated at all. It is benefiting indeed!]

"Girl, do you have any other questions?" Ye Xiao was apparently impatient. He really was thirsty to do that benefiting exercise.

However, Bing-Er actually wanted to have some serious discussion at this special moment...

"I have been having the same dream every night these days... Strange dream..." Bing-Er was confused. She said, "In fact, it doesn't feel like a dream. Sometimes, I didn't even sleep..."

"What?" Ye Xiao was interested.

"I always feel that something is wrong, and a woman in black shows up a lot, staring at me coldly..." Bing-Er was confused. "She seemed angry at the beginning, like she is about to kill somebody. After that, she would become helpless..."

Ye Xiao didn't understand. [Woman in black? Where is she?]

"In my dream..." Bing-Er stuck her tongue out. "When she shows up, I want to kill somebody. It is such an exciting feeling..."

Ye Xiao was confused. "Heavens... girl, after all you said just now... I still have no idea what you are talking about. Do you even know what you are talking about?"

Bing-Er tried to make it clearer, but she failed. She lowered her

head, "I don't know what I want to say either. What is going on... I..."

Ye Xiao was pleased by her adorable look. "Bing-Er, you are so lovely. Come on... Give me a kiss... Hmm..."

And he kissed her.

Bing-Er opened her small mouth trying to explain, but her mouth was kissed. She couldn't make a sound.

And then Ye Xiao got up, held up Bing-Er and walked to the bed. Apparently, he was turning into a thirsty wolf now...

Bing-Er was blushing. She just kept her head down in Ye Xiao's arms. She was shaking, but she wouldn't even think about stopping Ye Xiao.

At this moment, it seemed that woman in black showed up in her heart, staring at her with an embarrassed and angry look. In that woman's eyes, there was only coldness and anger...

Bing-Er trembled. She felt something extremely cold rushing up from her heart. It seemed her entire body was unbelievably changed again...

#...#

(Author's note: Ahem... Thirty million words abridged...)

...

(Author's note: This is an abridged chapter. Five hundred words are missing...)

# Chapter 608: Lots of Medicine!

---

After a long time, although the fever remained, [the cloud and rain](#) had stopped.

Ye Xiao held Bing-Er's soft body which was like baby sheep. He was gasping with satisfaction. He cheerfully said, "I never expected it could feel so good to have a wife..."

Deep inside his heart, he was grieving that he hadn't taken good use of his time in the previous life.

[If only I hadn't cultivated that bloody Pure Yang Martial Art...] He half closed his eyes and thought. He sighed and said, "I feel like I lived like a homeless dog those years... I actually haven't tasted such a brilliant thing until now. I really wasted so many beautiful sources the heavens blessed me with...]

Bing-Er was gasping. Her face was red. She stayed quiet in his arms like a small kitten. She really couldn't move a bit.

Ye Xiao seemed really strong on that thing though!

Bing-Er didn't get over the joy of the pleasant moment yet, but that cold strange feeling was rising up again. She murmured, "Why is it so strange? It comes more and more frequently these days. What is going on..."

She spoke in a rather low voice that was almost impossible to

hear.

Ye Xiao was gasping and restless too, so he didn't hear it clearly. He asked, "What is it?"

Bing-Er had already fallen asleep on his chest. She didn't answer.

Ye Xiao didn't get a response, but he didn't really put it in his mind. He then fell asleep too.

...

Seven days later, when Xiu-Er came to Ye Xiao, she took all those special metals that House of the Chaotic Storms collected. Other than that, she also brought a lot of treasures and fifteen hundred portions of materials for the Heaven Seizing Supreme Dan.

What surprised Ye Xiao was that the medical materials for Heaven Seizing Supreme Dan were only a small part of the things she brought to him this time. There were a huge amount of other treasures and materials that nearly made Ye Xiao feel dizzy!

The way Xiu-Er gave him these materials was much more interesting though!

She firstly gave him something necessary for making Agerasia Dan, Snow Lotus!

There were even 25 ten thousand-year-old Snow Lotus!

Other than the ten thousand years old Snow Lotus, there were much more Snow Lotus in different ages, including thousands of years old, one thousand years old, hundreds of years old... She brought a great amount! There were over ten thousand in total!

How enormous!

[What... What the hell is this?]

"Heavens! No way! How could it be so many?" Ye Xiao looked at those Snow Lotus. He was extremely surprised. "My god! Did you turn the entire world over?"

"Humphed!" Xiu-Er was disdainful.

"I guess there will never be any ten thousand years old Snow Lotus for the next thousands of years in this world!" Ye Xiao was excited.

"Humph. Not thousands of years. At least ten thousand years. There will not be any Snow Lotus in this world!" Xiu-Er humphed again. She was not only disdainful, but also arrogant.

"What?" Ye Xiao looked at her, shocked. That was for real.

[Isn't that too much of an exaggeration? Isn't it too arrogant to

say so?]

[Are you really so sure? None will be found in the entire Land of Han-Yang?]

Xiu-Er rolled up her eyes and humped again without saying a word.

Ye Xiao was right!

Did they turn the entire world over?

Absolutely! The two ladies truly had turned over every inch of the world to find these lotus!

Xiu of the Heavens wasn't exaggerating at all. It was the truth... There wouldn't be any Snow Lotus in Land of Han-Yang for the next ten thousand years.

Nobody knew what much she and Wan-Er had done in the few days to find those ten thousand years old Snow Lotus.

The two ladies had each taken one dan bead of the Heaven Seizing Supreme Dan beads they took from Ye Xiao. One third of their cultivation capability was unsealed. They were now apparently beyond the limitation of Land of Han-Yang, even Qing-Yun Realm. It was a piece of cake for them to casually break some mountains.

Right after taking the dan beads, one of them went to the north, and one to the south. They rushed so fast like lightnings and arrived at the extreme south and extreme north within a short time. They searched every inch of the mountains in the two ten thousand years frozen lands!

The south and the north points of the world were suffering earthquakes because of that.

Luckily, nobody lived there. Otherwise, they would have caused some serious trouble.

They actually cleared up all the snow on the mountains and looked for the Snow Lotus. That made it rather easier. All Snow Lotus older than five hundred years were taken away.

Surely, Snow Lotus was not the only thing they got. There were also Snow Ginseng, Blood Ginseng, Knotweed Root and other plants that were ten thousand years old.

All the materials in the snow mountains, none of those that were from old days could escape the two ladies' hands!

All in all, they had gotten a huge amount of things in different kinds.

They got every medical materials that were able to grow in the snow mountains. And they were in different ages!

They gave Ye Xiao the Snow Lotus especially, but they just gave him a ring which contained all the other things. Xiu-Er started to take out those things out of the ring...

"Ten thousand years old Blood Lotus. Twenty five."

"Nine thousand years old Blood Lotus."

"Between eight thousand to nine thousand years old..."

"These are seven thousand years old..."

"..."

"These are between five hundred to two thousand years old..."

"These are Blood Lotus. We keep them in a one ring so that it won't be affected by other materials. Snow Lotus and Blood Lotus are totally two different attributes. One is ice, while the other is fire. I don't know whether it will help to make the Agerasia Dan. You are the master dan-maker. I don't need to say this. Just have a look at them yourself!"

"Hmm... This ring has all Snow Ginseng in it. We didn't sort them out in years. You can do it yourself. I don't think you need it to make Agerasia Dan anyway..."

It seemed they didn't care about those that were not useful for making Agerasia Dan at all. However, if they thought any might be able to help, they would cherish it like the most important thing. Snow Lotus and Blood Lotus were both lotus, so they treated them specially. Ginseng were just nothing to them...

Ye Xiao looked into the rings and found the rings filled with all kinds of materials... That was terrifying somehow...

"This ring..."

"And this ring..."

Xiu-Er was proud and happy.

...

---

Cloud and rain means having sex.

# Chapter 609: Dancing Egg!

---

[It feels good to show you what real power is like and see how you bloat, you country man! You actually dared to look down upon us! I am going to blind your eyes with our shiny light and shock you till your heart stops beating by showing you our real power!]

[For so many years staying in this Land of Han-Yang, this is the most delightful thing I have ever done! You said it is difficult to find it? You said we can't find them all?]

[Ha! Easy! Just turn over the mountains and split them into halves. That will show everything in it, won't it...]

"In this ring..."

"There are metals and rocks in these three rings, not only what we had, but also those we found when we turned over the mountains..." Xiu-Er eventually said it. They had truly turned over the mountains.

Ye Xiao was shocked, with his jaw nearly touching the floor. He looked at her with blank eyes. He wasn't blind yet, but his heart was about to stop beating soon!

[My heavens!]

[They turned over the snow mountains! Lots of mountains!]

...

[These two ladies are too powerful. Even the most powerful man in Qing-Yun Realm may not be their rival!]

[Hmm... They only have several Heaven Seizing Supreme Dan beads. None of them could take all the dan beads. In other words, that is not their prime power. It should be eighty percent, seventy percent, or fifty percent, maybe less!]

[Oh my heavens and hell. How powerful are those freaks in Human Realm Upon Heavens?]

"Oh right. There are many inner cores of the spiritual animals in the snow mountains. There are... over two thousand in total. We didn't kill the low level ones. We let them go. We should let the younger ones live and just kill the old ones."

"Hmm. Here are the notes. You were right. We don't need any money. Here you are, thirty billion..."

Xiu-Er was so generous that Ye Xiao couldn't believe it.

It was not an exaggeration to say that the value of all the things in those rings, even before the materials were made into Supreme Dan, was much higher than all Wan Zhenghao had earned in his three thousand years of life! In fact, Wan Zhenghao's wealth was only an odd change compared to that!

Even if Wan Zhenghao worked hard for thirty thousand years more, he couldn't make as much money!

Wan Zhenghao, the world's recognized richest man meant nothing in front of all these treasures and materials!

That was the world's biggest property!

However, Xiu of the Heavens threw them all to Ye Xiao like they were just a pile of garbage.

Oh, right, Feng Monarch, not Ye Xiao!

Ye Xiao became generous too after all those great things went into his pocket.

He took out two jade bottles from inside his clothes and said, "Twelve Heaven Seizing Supreme Dan beads. All I made during the past few days. Lady Xiu-Er, just take them! As I am getting more familiar to the process, the success rate will rise up for sure. I will make the rest as soon as possible, so that the day of your return will not be delayed!"

Xiu-Er's eyes lit up as she grabbed the bottles over immediately. She totally forgot the annoyance she felt a moment earlier. "So soon? How come?"

Ye Xiao laughed. "It should be me asking this question. As I said, Heaven Seizing Supreme Dan is although not a replicable dan

according to the myth, however, once it is replicated, the myth is no longer a myth. Once I am skillful on making any special dan, it won't be so difficult. All dan beads are the same. Heaven Seizing Supreme Dan is no exception."

Xiu-Er smiled while holding the two bottles tight. She said, "Feng Monarch is indeed the best dan-maker in the world. Brilliant... Hmm. Well, you have those Snow Lotus already, so..."

Ye Xiao solemnly spoke, "I know what you want, Lady Xiu-Er. Relax. After I finish the work on Heaven Seizing Supreme Dan, I will get on the Agerasia Dan right away. I have been focusing on Heaven Seizing Supreme Dan, so really, I need to practice on making other dans first."

Xiu-Er was a bit nervous. "Please be careful. There is no more ten thousand years old Snow Lotus in the world except those I just gave you..."

"I am just a bit rusty on other dans, but I am sure I can make it!" Ye Xiao slapped on his chest. "With all these materials, if I still can't make Agerasia Dan, I should just crash my head on the wall to kill myself... Lady Xiu-Er, please relax. I can guarantee your Agerasia Dan. What I am going to make must be not only in supreme level, but also in supreme quality..."

"As long as you eat the Agerasia Dan bead I make, you can be young forever. Even when you are at the end of your life, you will remain young and beautiful!" Ye Xiao was confident.

"Pah! You are at the end of your life!" Xiu-Er cursed but in a happy way. She then flew away with great joy.

Right after Xiu-Er left, Ye Xiao threw all the materials into the Space.

"Brother Egg, listen. You have to make me more Heaven Seizing Supreme Dan beads this time." Ye Xiao was complaisant. "As long as you make enough for me, I will put all those materials into this place for you. You saw them yourself, right? Think about it. You will get whatever you want! Understand?"

When Xiu-Er took out the medical materials, Brother Egg knew that it was going to have some juicy supplies!

Now that Ye Xiao said so to it, it started to jump up and down. It jumped up high from the plate and fell down, again and again.

Apparently, it was too happy at the moment.

At the moment, the Egg hit the plate, yet the Egg didn't crack. How amazing!

Ye Xiao was frightened. When he saw the Egg was fine, he cursed, "Fxck! You are just an egg! You know what an egg is? You prick! What if you crack the yolk the hell out of you?"

The Egg just ignored him, no matter how he shouted.

It was like a colorful watermelon jumping up and down in the air, hitting the plate...

Ye Xiao was speechless.

[For fxck's sake. I have never seen an egg like this...]

Not to mention Ye Xiao, nobody in the universe had!

An egg was dancing, rolling and jumping up and down...

It was embarrassing just to have a glance at it!

...

# Chapter 610: So Many Dan Beads!

---

Brother Egg jumped up and down for a while before realizing that there should be enough Heaven Seizing Supreme Dan before the massive supply would enter the Space, so it started to do it. Whirlwind started to blow in the Space.

All those medical materials instantly became ashes!

Some of them became pure spiritual qi, and then got out from under Brother Egg's bottom...

This time, it didn't preserve any of it.

The materials were all used to make dan beads.

Brother Egg knew that there were much more valuable materials for him to absorb after this... Brother Egg knew a small leak would sink a great ship.

After a while, the sound of something hitting the plate continuously sounded...

That was a good harvest.

Hmm. An astonishing harvest indeed... It couldn't be described as surprising, instead, it should be described as terrifying!

Ye Xiao looked at Brother Egg working. He was stunned.

One, two, three, four... ten... thirty... fifty... one hundred... one hundred and fifty... two hundred... two hundred and fifty... He couldn't believe his eyes!

When Brother Egg stopped, Ye Xiao took over the full plate of Heaven Seizing Supreme Dan beads and counted. There were three hundred and sixty-nine beads in total!

"Holly heavens shxt!" Ye Xiao opened his eyes widely. He couldn't believe it.

Those were Heaven Seizing Supreme Dan!

They were something that only existed in the history, and there had only been one bead in the history!

However, hundreds of it were thrown out like cheap cabbages so casually by the Egg.

[Isn't this success rate too high? There are only one thousand and five hundred portions of materials, yet over three hundred and sixty dan beads are made! What is going on? What is the theory behind it?]

[Is this thing... really that valuable?]

[Maybe the top classed, supreme master dan-makers in the history are actually all useless. They are even worse than an Egg?]

Ye Xiao was looking at the Heaven Seizing Supreme Dan beads. He felt like his brain was in chaos.

Master Bai only needed fifty beads. In fact, Ye Xiao had given them over a dozen. They needed only over thirty more.

Ye Xiao realized he would have over three hundred left...

He felt dizzy.

He was dizzy, blank, and lost. However, Brother Egg was not. It was waiting for the enormous amount of supplies after making those Heaven Seizing Supreme Dan beads...

[You promised!]

[Keep your word!]

It realized Ye Xiao was lost in the moment, and it didn't know when he would be back to himself. Brother Egg was annoyed. It jumped over up and down in front of Ye Xiao. After jumping for a while, it realized Ye Xiao was still lost, so it directly went beyond his head and then... fell down fast to hit his head!

- Bang! -

Brother Egg had smashed a Dao Origin Stage cultivator, Gu Jinlong to death!

Sparks flew before Ye Xiao's eyes because of that hit. A bump showed up on his head, and he looked just like an unicorn.

"What the hell are you doing?" He was angry!

"&...^\$£.\*(&....\*\$\_£..." The Egg flew around and around. That meant, "Where is my supplies?"

Ye Xiao was hit so heavily. He had really lost his mood right now. He spoke in a mean voice, "None! I will feed them to pigs later!"

Brother Egg was nervous. It flew up and down in front of Ye Xiao and then got into his arms, trying to act coquettishly...

"Holy heavens!" Ye Xiao touched the bump on the head and inhaled. "Don't you dare to hit me again, prick!"

Brother Egg was begging him. It talked through its mind, promising that it wouldn't do that again.

Ye Xiao finally felt at ease. He humped and then started to throw the good stuffs into Wood Space.

Sky Space was ready for accepting materials. Cosmic Hades was

inside it. It truly recovered fast. After the massive absorption of the Egg, it only took a few days for it to recover lots of its energy. It was emitting some cold qi again.

If Ye Xiao threw a small piece of special metal into the Sky Space, maybe Cosmic Hades would go mad again...

Brother Egg never refused any spiritual qi. It absorbed even the cold qi. However, it only absorbed the cold qi from Cosmic Hades when it had to. Normally, it wouldn't do that. That was why Brother Egg didn't consume the spiritual qi in Sky Space, but only those in other Spaces!

Now that the Space lacked of resources, the seven Spaces were all short for spiritual qi. Ye Xiao couldn't let the Cosmic Hades burst at the moment. He just couldn't afford it.

However, it turned out so good to put those materials into the Wood Space. Ye Xiao felt quite comforted.

Brother Egg only turned a small part of the materials into ashes and left most of them to be planted in the Space. That meant Brother Egg considered those as renewable materials.

In other words, those were truly valuable things.

Even Brother Egg approved them, so Ye Xiao of course would cherish them.

After the materials were planted in the Wood Space, the medical materials field was expanding fast...

The medical materials Xiu-Er gave him were in absolute high level.

Ye Xiao only put one third of all the medical materials he had, and the medical materials field was expanded twice already!

The living qi was coming out from those spiritual medicines. Ye Xiao felt that the Space was more stable now.

The 25 ten thousand years old Snow Lotus, he wouldn't make them into dan beads directly. He planted them in the Wood Space right away.

Not only the Snow Lotus, he also planted Blood Lotus, Blood Ginseng and the others. All the ten thousand years old materials were planted at the same area.

In Wood Space, these materials were in the same sort, the Ten Thousand Years Old Meds!

Brother Egg could wait for the spiritual qi storm to begin in the Space!

Under Brother Egg's bottom, there were supreme dan beads coming out one after another.

...

# Chapter 611: Super Agerasia Dan!

---

Ye Xiao talked nicely, "Brother Egg, do what you like on others, but please, you have to make me some Agerasia Dan beads! Otherwise, we will have to return all these good stuffs..."

Brother Egg heard 'we will have to return all these good stuffs...'

It was stunned and then worked even harder to make more supreme dan beads.

It was impossible to return those materials! Absolutely not!

That was exactly how Brother Egg felt.

From those ten thousand years old Snow Lotus, a strong whirlwind of spiritual qi blew over.

The spiritual qi was so dense.

It went over Brother Egg's bottom and then something hit the plate and made sounds.

Over a dozen dan beads showed up there!

Agerasia Dan!

Ye Xiao grabbed some and had a look. He couldn't recognize them at all. It seemed they were not the Agerasia Dan beads he expected. "Are these Agerasia Dan? Why are they not like how they are described in the book?"

Brother Egg shook proudly shook its body and made a mind transmission. "@%\$&\*^&\${@\$<..^^#..."

That meant, "My works are never ordinary things! These are Super Agerasia Dan that are made of ten thousand years old materials. They should be with better quality than the normal Supreme Agerasia Dan. It can not only make people stay young, but also offer capability to automatically heal the wound on the skin instantly! No scars left!"

"This Agerasia Dan is far beyond the level of the Agerasia Dan people knew about. It is called... Creation Agerasia Dan!"

"Creation Agerasia Dan..." Ye Xiao was surprised, but he felt there must be something wrong. "How many materials it took you to make these dan beads?"

Brother Egg stayed quiet for a while before it answered.

Ye Xiao heard it and totally freaked out. "You bloody squanderer..."

Brother Egg had used half of the ten thousand years old materials to make these dan beads!

They couldn't use the materials again before it was fully recovered.

Ye Xiao was sad and speechless!

[That is so wasting! So extravagant! So... bad!]

[Didn't you say I need to focus on making Agerasia Dan? You told me you would have to return those materials if I didn't make it good. Besides, I didn't kill those ten thousand years old materials. They can reproduce again anyway. Why do you have to be so angry...] Brother Egg was annoyed.

[You told me to do everything and now you call me squanderer?]

[Where is justice?]

[Do you think I wanted to make Agerasia Dan? You asked for it...]

[Well... I did keep most of the spiritual qi here... but I just can't tell you.]

[Haha. I am not a fool!]

Ye Xiao was upset!

[Heavens. Why?]

[I asked for this!]

[Well, however... with all these Agerasia Dan beads... How many beautiful ladies can I manipulate?]

Thinking about that, he didn't feel so upset anymore.

Jung Yinglian would totally get one. Bing-Er would get one too. Su Yeyue... Sure thing...

He felt so good about it and went home happily.

However, he didn't know his dear Brother Egg just played a trick on him. What a memorable thing to successfully trick him!

Wan Zhenghao didn't understand why Feng Monarch became so sneaky recently. Every time Feng Monarch came to Ling-Bao Hall, he only spent a little time to deal with the business. The rest of the time, he only stayed in his own room secretly as if he was making something serious...

And he left early...

[What is he doing?]

However, Feng Monarch had given him hundreds of Supreme Dan beads for the next auction...

There would be many more dan beads to come. It should be much more than this time.

Boss Wan was so happy and thrilled.

[The hundreds of dan beads I have now... are enough to refill half of my storage...]

[Not to mention a bunch more of dan beads are coming next time!]

[The only thing that I can't understand is that how can Monarch be so efficient in making dan beads. That was some metamorphic level dan-making there. Unbelievable! That is historical!]

Ye Xiao returned to the House of Ye and directly went to his own yard.

"Bing-Er, open your mouth!" He sounded weird.

"Hmm? Why?" Bing-Er looked at him curiously.

"Just open your mouth. I brought something nice for you." Ye Xiao laughed and made himself sound mysterious.

"Master, you want to scare me again..." Bing-Er murmured, but she still opened her small mouth as he said.

The next moment, she felt an indescribable scent rushing in her throat. A moist warm feeling entered her body, then a mass of warm energy rose up all of a sudden.

After just a short time, she felt her arms and legs were filled with warm energy. She even felt so comfortable.

And then she had another clear feeling, that her body was fully recovered!

The feeling came up from the bottom of her heart. It confused her. [My body has always been well. Why would I feel that I was recovered?]

[Is that an illusion?]

[What's happening to me recently? Something wrong here and there all the time!]

However, it wasn't her illusion. She was recovered, thoroughly!

Not only her body and cultivation, but also one other thing!

Ye Xiao made himself a real trouble by giving Bing-Er that dan bead.

Because of that dan bead, Bing-Er wouldn't let Ye Xiao get on bed for the entire night...

He couldn't even get close to her, not to mention doing that thing...

Ye Xiao could only sigh with a long breath. "I did this to myself."

Bing-Er's body was changing after she took that Agerasia Dan bead.

There were some filthy things slowly coming out from her skin. Those things were dark colored and also a bit stinky...

Bing-Er always loved to be clean and clear, so she cared so much about it. How could she allow her master to have sex with her under such circumstances?

She just locked the door and watched herself changing. She washed herself again and again... until early in the next morning when the filth was all gone...

She felt that she was finally clean again, and also felt that she seemed to exuviate within one night...

...

# Chapter 612: Burn the Incense for Help!

---

Ye Xiao didn't know. Bing-Er didn't know either.

In fact, Bing-Er was the head elder Xuan Bing in Misty Cloud Palace.

Nobody knew how long she had lived and cultivated. This time, she had been seriously injured and fell to this mortal world. She just temporarily lost her memory, that was all.

However, her body was still the same.

After all that she cultivated, she had long reached the incomparable level. Her body had become supreme soma long ago.

However, she had been fighting for so many years. Even though she got improved for so many times and refreshed her status many times, there were some fundamental damages in her body. There was a great loss of her life essence. Her life essence seemed increasing, but that was because she made up the loss and brought up more to it. That was a huge difference.

The Creation Agerasia Dan bead refilled all life essence that she had lost in the past at one time!

Everything... All of it... She was back to her perfection!

Even some hidden wounds inside her body were cured.

All negative effects on her body was gone because of this Creation Agerasia Dan bead!

Bing-Er was in an incomparable strong status at the moment.

Her body was nearly good enough to awake her memory. However, Bing-Er loved the life she was living now, so subconsciously, she resisted the memory. That was why she still didn't get her memory back by then...

No matter how she resisted, it would come to her sooner or later. Once it was activated, all memory would be back to her at once!

In other words, it could be next second, or maybe the next minute. Bing-Er would eventually became one of the most powerful martial artists in Qing-Yun Realm, the Head Elder Xuan Bing of Misty Cloud Palace!

Bing-Er had no idea. Nor had Ye Xiao!

The next morning.

Ye Xiao saw Bing-Er and he was totally stunned!

He had been shocked so many times recently, and he was going to get used to it soon!

What he saw was... Bing-Er, as gorgeous and beautiful as she was the previous day, was even more more gorgeous and beautiful today.

Her eyes were limpid, her eyebrows were like crescent moons, and the shape of her body was like a fantastic picture... It was hard to describe this beauty...

Ye Xiao couldn't find a word to describe how beautiful she was.

There was some aesthetic feeling added on her pure charm.

Even though she was just in front of Ye Xiao, he felt like she was fake. She was sweet and wonderful like a dream to him.

"Master, are you alright? Are you lost?" Bing-Er saw Ye Xiao staring back at her, so she blushed and asked bashfully.

"Bing-Er... You..." Ye Xiao swallowed. "It has only been one night... How... Why... What is this change on you? Come, c-come... to my room."

Bing-Er was confused. She looked at herself and walked after Ye Xiao into the room. She spoke in confusion, "Change? Where? I..."

Ye Xiao held her tight in his arms the second when she entered the room. "Let me have a look. I have to have a closer look. How

come you have changed this much... I have to check carefully..." While he was talking, he had ripped off all clothes on her...

Bing-Er finally realized what he wanted to do, but it was too late to stop it...

That was how he wanted to check...

"You are so annoying master..." This was the only thing Bing-Er could say...

...

A long distance away from them...

It was the base area of Sunlight Sect, one of the two great sects.

Several Sky Origin Stage master cultivators stared at the burning incense. They looked hurried and sincere.

"I wonder whether our ancestral masters will send people down to us..." One of them was talking with worry.

"There is nothing else we can do now. The only thing we can do is to pray that our ancestral masters will hear us and send some powerful men down to kill that Feng Zhiling. We are too weak to defeat him right now... If we forcibly try, we will die..." another man said.

"I hope... This will reach them..."

"It will. This is the only way we can communicate with the masters in Qing-Yun Realm. It will definitely work! They have to hear us..."

...

In another great sect, the same thing was happening.

When the Lunisolar Glory group, the twenty-eight men first fought against someone, half of them were killed. The rest of them returned to their sects and reported it. Both sects were shocked.

They all couldn't believe that the Monarch of Ling-Bao Hall was actually so overwhelmingly powerful!

Bu Jingtian couldn't kill him. Even two dozens of men together couldn't kill him. The most powerful force they had couldn't defeat Feng Monarch. The two great sects really had no idea how to deal with Feng Zhiling.

The only thing they could do was exactly to burn some incense and pray!

If Feng Monarch got back on them, they would all be wiped out.

Feng Monarch and the two great sects were in opposite positions after all. Feng Monarch was in charge of Ling-Bao Hall, and he controlled so many assassins. Apparently, he was not a merciful man.

The two great sects had been trying suppress Feng Monarch, and they even fought several times trying to kill him. There was no room for negotiation at the moment.

Feng Monarch would definitely come for revenge sooner or later.

That was why the two great sects wanted their fontal masters to come down and help them as soon as possible.

They wished it could be the next minute that their men could come down and kill Feng Zhiling.

People in the two sects were really getting through a bad time these days...

They knew if Feng Zhiling arrived, they would die out...

...

The two great sects were praying sincerely almost at the same time...

In Sunlight Sect, the smoke of the burning incense suddenly

started to sway. The statuary of their Grand Ancestral Master suddenly lit up and then...

- Pop! -

A small cloth bag showed up.

There was a note in that bag, with some words on it. 'What is it? Write it down and put it back to the bag!'

People of Sunlight Sect nearly cried with warm tears.

[Finally.]

...

# Chapter 613: Take You Out

---

The leader of Sunlight Sect hurriedly wrote down the inquests and put it into the bag, and then they kept burning more incense...

After a while, that bag disappeared. - Shoot! -

They were all surprised.

"Our grand ancestral master is among the gods now. He surely has many fantastic methods that we cannot even imagine. We are surprised by what we just saw, but it should be just an insignificant skill for our grand ancestral master!"

The leader solemnly talked, "No matter how miraculous it is, it is normal for our ancestral master."

At the same time, the same magical thing happened in Starlight Sect.

The only difference was that they didn't get a bag, but a sword.

...

If Wan Zhenghao knew what the two sects were doing, he would be surprised. [I am not the only one in this world... They also only burn incense and pray when they are in trouble... I am not the only one who did this...]

After a while, when the two great sects all got their replies, they felt relieved. All negative feelings were gone.

All they needed to do was to wait till their ancestral masters send people to kill Feng Zhiling. [Sunlight Sect and Starlight Sect would always stand strong in the Land of Han-Yang forever...]

...

In another side, Ye Xiao was relieved too.

He made more than enough Heaven Seizing Supreme Dan beads.

Also, he had made more than enough Agerasia Dan beads, although it cost too much.

Ye Xiao was enjoying the leisure days recently. He went to Ling-Bao Hall every day, but only for a while, and then went back home to stay with Bing-Er. He was almost obsessed with that special sport...

There was one thing Ye Xiao found really weird though. After Bing-Er ate the Agerasia Dan, she became much more beautiful and gorgeous, but even though she was still loving Ye Xiao, she seemed slightly getting colder and colder...

Ye Xiao didn't know why and whether he should worry about it.

[What is wrong?]

[Bing-Er is not cultivating any coldness attribute martial art.  
Why is this happening...]

...

That was why Ye Xiao decided to take Bing-Er to Ling-Bao Hall from time to time.

In Ye Xiao's heart, Bing-Er was the person he trusted the most. He thought it was right to let Bing-Er know something about himself.

He wanted Bing-Er to follow up with him in the future.

Besides, Bing-Er had shown how smart she was earlier. It was absolutely possible that she could be his capable assistant.

**The sooner it started, the sooner it succeeded!**

He couldn't let people know he was actually both Ye Xiao and Feng Zhiling at the same time, but Bing-Er... he could totally trust her.

**It was something he had to do sooner or later after all!**

In the morning, Ye Xiao secretly took Bing-Er out.

Song Jue acted like he didn't know it. He thought Ye Xiao must be taking Bing-Er out for fun. He asked him about it, but indifferently...

"These juniors are ridiculous... With that smart and fast-rolling head, why not spend more time to learn more things. You have been out hanging around all day, and stayed with the woman all the time while you're at home. Fine. Now you actually take the woman out for fun. Heavens. Look how our world changes..."

Song Jue sighed. "I thought the little prick will be sensible since he is much stronger now. It turns out he hasn't changed a bit, except stronger. Damn it." He sighed and then started to go around the house and began the practice of the blood guards.

Apparently, in Song Jue's heart, it was not a big deal what Ye Xiao went out for fun in brothels. He thought it was normal... and it was something all men should do!

However, it was not right to always stay around a woman at home!

Well... That truly made people speechless when he thought of it.

However, he thought it went too far that Ye Xiao took the woman out for fun together, but, after all, he was just a steward who

earned money from the House of Ye, so he felt there was nothing he could do to discipline this nephew...

[He saved me, gave me back a bright future, recovered my cultivation... How could I reproach him?]

[That is wrong...]

...

When they arrived at a secret place, Bing-er saw Ye Xiao touching his own face and then his bones started making cracking sound. After a while, he became someone else! Bing-Er was shocked, stunned, and astonished!

[Is... Is this a magic?]

[You actually changed to somebody else?]

And then she felt happy about it. [Master can change appearance!]

Ye Xiao turned over and looked at Bing-Er's surprised eyes. "What is it?"

"Master, you can actually change yourself! You are so capable and marvelous!" Bing-Er was admiring. "Can you bring out a rabbit by magic? That kind like a snowball... I really want one..."

Ye Xiao was speechless.

[Capable? Marvelous? You're praising me like that? I feel shameful to accept it...]

[Magic? A rabbit? White like snow? That is too much!]

[You really want it? Why so coquettish all of a sudden?]

[What is this?]

[What is wrong?]

[Is this a mistake?] ...

Suddenly, something dirty came up in his mind. [Well... I guess I don't need to bring anything up... White rabbits... like snowballs... There are exactly two on your chest... and I would love to have them now!]

Hmm. That was gross. When a girl did this, it was adorable. When a man... that made people puke!

"Heh, heh... It is just a disguise art. Mine is just in a higher level... Bing-Er, you can do it too. As long as you know the method, it is not that hard really." Ye Xiao solemnly said, "Come on. Let me teach you. It is simple."

Ye Xiao was exactly like a weird middle-aged man fooling a little girl. That was gross.

Actually, Ye Xiao wanted to see Bing-Er's painful face when she first change her appearance and crack her bones...

It was painful to operate such a disguise art for the first time.

Bing-Er would definitely moan with tears in her eyes. That would make her look even much more gorgeous...

However, what happened astonished him seriously!

Bing-Er operated the energy like Ye Xiao told her. Expectedly, her bones started to crack... And then it was done. She completely changed.

She didn't even make a sound during the process. No painful expression on her face at all, not to mention tears dropping down...

[What the hell is going on?]

Ye Xiao was totally stunned...

...

# Chapter 614: Different Aesthetic Standards

---

[What the hell is this?]

[When I first did this, I nearly passed out because of the pain. Why doesn't she feel a damn thing?]

[Why is it so different?]

"This is fantastic! Marvelous!" Bing-Er learned a new skill, which was cool and magical. She kept using it again and again, with her bones making sounds of cracking...

She even wanted to make a rabbit, but she surely failed.

Ye Xiao's disguise art was to transform the bones of human body. It couldn't just make up something. It was not magic!

"Master, this is so brilliant!" Bing-Er looked at him admiringly, with an expression like 'you are so knowledgeable'. She was totally worshiping him.

Ye Xiao's fact twisted. [I am totally broken down by you. Please do not worship me. I should worship you. What a difference! ...]

He suddenly became a bit childish. He grabbed a bottle of dark disguising liquid and smeared it on Bing-Er's face...

He was actually a bit surprised by how childish he could be.

It seemed his personality had been changed since he was reborn. Xiao Monarch was calm and stable all the time, yet he was like a child...

Bing-Er held a small mirror, looking at her face. That was ugly. She stopped talking to Ye Xiao for quite a long time.

All women wanted to be beautiful. Nobody was allowed to challenge their beauty!

In fact, for many men, it was also important to have a pretty face!

[Master is so annoying!]

[How could he make me look so ugly... This is worse than a pig face...]

Ye Xiao felt happy now. He finally vented out his grudge, and he even explained that this was just one of all the unpleasant things that would have to happen in one's life, as if it was good to happen on her.

He also told her where he was taking her.

Bing-Er was shocked!

[Wahh!]

[Master is so powerful!]

[He actually achieved so much out there...]

[My brilliant master indeed!]

And then she was admiring again...

She was so happy to know the secret!

That was a secret Ye Xiao only shared to her!

It meant so much to her! That was awesome!

Bing-Er nodded like chicken pecking. "Don't worry, Master. I will keep the secret! I won't tell anybody!"

She wouldn't know that she truly had kept the secret for her entire life...

No matter when she was Bing-Er... or Xuan-Bing!

Feng Monarch stayed in Ling-Bao Hall for a short time and then left with a girl soon.

Wan Zhenghao got ten bottles of dan beads.

For Wan Zhenghao, the dan beads were now more important than his life!

Any two dan beads could bring him money more than his one year of profit!

That was such a huge wealth!

Other than that, Wan Zhenghao finally knew the answer to the question that haunted him for a long time. He couldn't help giggling after Feng Monarch took leave.

"Like I said... Feng Monarch is so capable and young, so powerful and rich, how could he not have a beauty to stay with... I see... Now I get it."

"Feng Monarch is not only superior in dan-making, but also in aesthetic standard... Unbelievable... He doesn't like beautiful girls... He only likes ugly ones... Gosh. This girl he brought over this time... Well, how do I put it... The only good side of her in my eyes is that she is female... She is so ugly. Dark skin. Slim skeleton body. Terrible body shape and terrible face. But Monarch is so close to her. I could never think of this. How could I... Oh my heavens..."

Ye Xiao didn't talk much to Bing-Er, but the way they looked at

each other was never going to lie. Wan Zhenghao had lived thousands of years after all.

Wan Zhenghao half closed his eyes. He was lost in imagination. [Now, I finally have one thing that is better than Monarch. The aesthetic standard of beautiful girls... It doesn't have to be a pretty face. Just not too ugly. Must be perfect shaped. I love white and a bit overweight women..."

...

They stayed in Ling-Bao Hall for only a short time. Bing-Er realized what great business her master was doing, as she had such great memory and she was so wise. She understood what Ye Xiao wanted her to do.

Everything!

She knew it, and then started it right away.

As she started to take care of things, it truly shocked Ye Xiao again.

No matter what she was dealing with, she was so skillful and experienced. Even Ye Xiao couldn't do as well as she did...

That not only shocked Ye Xiao, but also Bing-Er herself. She couldn't believe it too. According to her own explanation, she didn't know what exactly was going on. It felt like she was born

with such capabilities. Maybe she had done a lot of such things before!

[The girl is definitely a monster!] Ye Xiao was shocked again so he thought.

Ye Xiao didn't know what Wan Zhenghao was thinking, fortunately. If he did, he would definitely spit out blood immediately.

[What the hell. Why is that a wrong aesthetic standard to you? I did this to cover her real face, you pig. And... I don't want her to become more glaring than me. You haven't seen her real gorgeous face, you stupid Wan Zhenghao. If you see her, you will be thrilled to death!]

"From now on, you can just come over and take care the business. But, remember to keep your face this way. That is the only way to keep it a secret and keep it safe." Ye Xiao said. It shocked Bing-Er.

[He didn't make me look ugly just because he wanted to?]

[Do I have to be this ugly when I come here?]

Bing-Er nearly freaked out as she loved to be beautiful so much.

...

# Chapter 615: Here He Comes

---

Ye Xiao wouldn't give in on this matter. He would never show weakness.

If Bing-Er went out with her extremely beautiful face, she would be missing within half a day...

Ye Xiao knew that she couldn't understand how dangerous it was, but he clearly knew about it.

Besides, he was a bit selfish doing this. [Bing-Er's beauty should only be shown to me alone... Such a waste to let others see her!]

That was such a strong male chauvinistic idea!

Ye Xiao would actually rather let Bing-Er become an ugly village girl that men whoever saw her would be regretting it for three years... while she was actually a world's No. 1 beauty...

...

When he came home, he surprisedly saw Zuo Wuji waiting there in front of the yard with a book in his hand. He was sitting there quietly.

He didn't look impatient at all.

Zuo Wuji and Lan Langlang were two of the few people who could wait for him just outside his room. Well, that was a privilege set by the previous Ye Xiao. Song Jue didn't object to it.

However, the sudden visit of Zuo Wuji meant something abnormal was happening!

Ye Xiao and Bing-Er walked over to him. Zuo Wuji raised his head.

He was amazed and then returned his calmness.

Ye Xiao praised it in his heart. Zuo Wuji truly was really good at self-control! Every man was stunned when Bing-Er showed up. Ye Xiao knew that if he were Zuo Wuji and he saw such a beautiful girl, he would definitely get lost.

Only Zuo Wuji could calm himself down after just a glance with surprise. After that, he was calm and steady like he only just saw a pink skeleton. Ye Xiao admired him on this.

And then Ye Xiao suddenly remembered... [Oh, right... He is disabled on that thing...]

[Well, I feel sorry for him... I am capable of curing that now... Hmm. Let me do it today!]

"Xiao Xiao, you are back. Finally. And this lady is...?" Zuo Wuji asked casually.

"My concubine." Ye Xiao nodded and smiled. He was declaring ownership.

"Alright," Zuo Wuji answered indifferently. That pissed Ye Xiao a little bit, since Ye Xiao was gloating somehow.

Hmm. It was not that he wasn't calm and steady enough. He had just become a real man for two lives. He naturally had a strong feeling of protectiveness for his woman. Besides, he felt like gloating about having such a beautiful girl after all. That was normal.

In fact, Ye Xiao and Zuo Wuji were exactly in the age that gave them the strongest feeling of this kind. Ye Xiao had lived two lives, but he was a beginner in romance. He was exactly like a teenager at the moment. However, Zuo Wuji seemed much older. He was so calm. He didn't look like a teenager at all!

To put it in a nice way, Ye Xiao was being honest and sincere, however, Zuo Wuji was just like a little old man!

"Xiao Xiao, we need to talk," Zuo Wuji peacefully spoke.

"Okay. In to my room."

They didn't hesitate; they just went to the study room. Bing-Er left them after serving them tea and hot water.

The room belonged to the men now. Even she wouldn't interrupt. She just waited outside the door.

Zuo Wuji held the cup in his hands for a long time before he talked. He was silent.

Ye Xiao didn't rush him at all. He just drank the tea and waited. [You must have come for something important. You don't say it, I won't ask.]

After a while, Zuo Wuji looked down at the tea in the cup. Finally he talked, "I am here for one thing. I have a question for Feng Monarch."

Ye Xiao seemed calm, but he was actually a bit impatient. As Zuo Wuji finally talked, he quickly answered, "What is it? Go ahead."

And then he suddenly realized something. [Wait! What did he say?]

[Feng Monarch?]

"What Feng Monarch? You have a question for Feng Zhiling, then why are you here?" Ye Xiao hurriedly tried to cover it. His head was in a mess. [Zuo Wuji, you prick. Why bring it to this so fast? I am not ready for this...]

[How on earth did he figure this out?]

[He actually brought the foppish young lord Ye Xiao and Feng Monarch together?]

"That is not interesting if you keep denying it." Zuo Wuji frowned. "Honestly, I truly couldn't imagine the world's richest man and the best dan-maker in the world is actually one of the 'three lords in town', my best friend! I am only convinced by the truth!"

Ye Xiao looked at Zuo Wuji without saying anything.

"I said it was the truth. Don't you think I am lying!? I guess you will have to keep denying it, unless I tell you how I got to know it? Fine. This must get done soon anyway. Let me show you what I have." Zuo Wuji humphed. "Don't I know your real personality? You just won't give up before death catches you!"

Ye Xiao threw up his hands and shrugged. He said, "I don't mind if you want to make things clear. But I truly didn't get it just now."

He was denying it, in a perfect way.

"Humph. I know you won't admit it easily. You are good at playing tricks. So loathsome!" Zuo Wuji cursed and said, "First, when I suggested you a strategy and concerned for Ling-Bao Hall, you kept speaking for Feng Monarch... Ling-Bao Hall was in a death end, and we were trying to figure out something to help Ling-Bao Hall. All those schemes I said, should be no more than just our own imagination. No matter how good they are, they

shouldn't be given to Ling-Bao Hall for real! However, that night, Ling-Bao Hall actually did what I suggested... Everything I suggested..."

"My house was burned because of it!" Zuo Wuji looked at Ye Xiao with anger. "No compensation at all! No nothing!"

Ye Xiao rubbed his head and coughed. He said, "Well that is not a strong proof anyway..."

"What proof do you need more? We are the two people in the world who knows what I said that night. I didn't leak it to anyone. Who brought that to Ling-Bao Hall? Huh?" Zuo Wuji spoke in anger.

...

# Chapter 616: Reveal Your Secret

---

"Heh, heh, heh... There is no absolute thing in the world. Come on. Maybe there are people from Ling-Bao Hall searching around and hear our conversation by coincidence. They loved your idea, so they did it. It is not totally impossible, is it? You should know that there are three top assassins, Ning Biluo, Zhao Pingtian and Liu Changjun in Ling-Bao Hall. It is never a difficult thing for any of them to overhear us in your house!" Ye Xiao didn't admit it. He just brought up whatever he could think of to deny it. That was, however, a possible situation anyway!

"Pah! Don't you know those men of Boundless Lake were staying in my house? Even Ning Biluo and Zhao Pingtian couldn't just come and listen to our conversation easily! Why do you have to deny it!"

"You said it yourself. Boundless Lake people were staying in your house. Ning Biluo knew their enemies were living in your place, that was why he went there and coincidentally heard our conversation! Isn't it reasonable?"

"Damn it! Do you really have to be so tough on this. Coincidence? Humph!" Zuo Wuji was annoyed. "Fine. One more. A few days ago, you dropped in and asked me about the princes' followers. I felt strange about it then... Anyway, what you asked for is secret information that only my house has... I gave it to you. That night, Second Prince's family was wiped out. His followers were all killed..."

"Well that doesn't..." Ye Xiao wanted to deny that too.

"Stop it! Let me finish first! That day, I gave you information about Crown Prince too. A few days later, Crown Prince's treason was exposed." Zuo Wuji wouldn't let him deny.

"If people knew it long ago, why would they wait till the kingdom was in a troublesome situation?"

"These are things only you and me knew. I didn't leak it, who did then?"

"Heh, heh... Heh, heh... Maybe... Well..." Ye Xiao tried to cover it.

Zuo Wuji angrily spoke, "Moreover... You showed your slip a long time ago. When I said I was sick and Lan Langlang was worrying about his head... you actually said you could cure us..."

Ye Xiao didn't know what to respond, "Urhhh..."

[Damn it! He truly has a smart brain. He actually put all those things together.]

"Lan Langlang and me believed you. It was such a thrilling thing for us. And it turned out it was true. Lan Langlang's head is cured. Even his crossed-eyes are cured... Even... His bowleg is getting better too!" Zuo Wuji said, "I asked Lan Langlang. He told me that you gave him some medicine. Well... I don't think you have the capability to get that medicine. However, Feng Monarch is an

expert on this. What do you want to say about it?"

Ye Xiao clicked on his tongue. He finally couldn't say anything.

"Don't even think about stopping this. You don't have anything to say, I do a lot. I had no idea how to start my career. Recently, I do. Chen Zhi it is what I should fight for. This is my deepest thought in my heart. You are the only one who knows about it..."

"Tell me. How many days since I told you this? God damn it. Things happened one after another. Everything happened right in the way to my joy! I was just thinking about putting off Crown Prince and Second Prince, and we should begin with Second Prince. Second Prince was taken care of right after that! And then I thought, since Second Prince was gone, I should do something about the Crown Prince. Well, he committed treason..."

Zuo Wuji was a bit confused. "Everything happened as I wanted. Those are things that I have to succeed so that I can push Chen Zhi to the throne... Now it is all done for me. Just as I wish."

"The only person in the world who would do so, knows how to do so, and was capable of doing so is you! I guess I don't need to repeat it again, do I?"

"No matter how you keep denying it, you can't. Everything that happened was related to Ling-Bao Hall! How dare you still deny it?" Zuo Wuji stood up in anger and shouted all of a sudden. He stepped one foot on the chair and pointed at Ye Xiao's nose as he angrily shouted, "Why are you still playing dumb in front of me? Say it!"

Ye Xiao was embarrassed. He humbly spoke, "Urhhh... Well... I was wrong..."

Zuo Wuji didn't calm down any bit. "So you admit it?"

Ye Xiao shrugged. "You are so determined. What else can I do?"

Zuo Wuji stared at him carefully for a while and then started laughing. He was proud and vigorous. "It is you! I thought I was wrong, since you were denying it so hard..."

Ye Xiao was stunned again!

[Damn it! He got me again!]

[He has no proof at all! All he did is talking and talking! He set me up!]

[But... Why... Why was I that easy to fool!]

[Bloody heavens! He said he wasn't fooling me so I believed it! What a cunning prick!]

Ye Xiao pointed at Zuo Wuji with a shaking finger. "You... You... You... Fine... Alright..."

Zuo Wuji humped and rolled up his eyes. "What? What fine? I am perfectly fine! Answer me. Ling-Bao Hall fights for survival, that is reasonable. Why do you have to fight around my house? Half of my house was gone! Do you know how much it cost us to repair it? Ling-Bao Hall is rich. You don't care about money. We do! Now we are here talking about this, what is it that you will do to make it up for me?"

Ye Xiao was angry because he was embarrassed. "What do you want me to do? Your house comes from flesh and blood of the people! Good to get it destroyed!"

Zuo Wuji raged up. "Pah! How the fxck do you dare you to say so! You mean you are not going to pay me a damn thing, is it?"

Ye Xiao sat on the chair like a losing rooster. "I have no money!"

Zuo Wuji stared at him fiercely and Ye Xiao stared back. After a while, they started to laugh!

After laughing for a while, Ye Xiao stopped first. He said, "God damn, it you are smart. Holy heavens. I feel lucky that you are not my enemy. God bless me."

...

# Chapter 617: Talk Like Controlling the Kingdom

---

Zuo Wuji humphed and said, "God bless you? Pah! Let me tell you more. I am not the only one who have questions about Ling-Bao Hall. Those officials in the court are all cunning and experienced men. They will surely think of Feng Monarch on these cases. Even though they can't be entirely sure, they can at least make a close guess! Currently, they are simply shocked by the five hundred billion bounty... That is all... They don't want to be listed on the warrant because of any word they say. It is everybody's duty after all, but it is their own lives that are at risk..."

"For them, outlaws like you is the most dangerous and horrible thing. Only a few assassins could already wipe their families out... Who dares to mess with you under such circumstances?" Zuo Wuji continued, "Besides, Ling-Bao Hall has done things that people praise. Nobody would blame you."

Ye Xiao nodded. "Indeed. I have thought about that myself."

"However, Xiao Xiao, if this lasts long, Ling-Bao Hall will become the biggest enemy of all the forces in the Land of Han-Yang. You must realize it. Do not just enjoy the current pleasure and ignore the hidden danger in the future."

Zuo Wuji said, "Ling-Bao Hall is indeed powerful in the Land of Han-Yang. However, it is not strong enough to fight against all royal houses in the world. You can't do things like this again if you want Ling-Bao Hall to develop further. The next thing you need to do is to rest and save power. Sometimes, an unseen force is the

most terrifying one."

Ye Xiao couldn't agree more.

After a powerful strike, there should be some soft tactics after.

Otherwise, he would become an enemy to the entire world.

Zuo Wuji was right about it!

In fact, Ye Xiao could kill everyone else in the world, but when there were nobody else in the world, what was left meaningful...

Ye Xiao looked at Zu Wuji and was suddenly enlightened.

He said, "The little prince you are so faithful to, how is he?"

Zuo Wuji smiled. "Chen Zhi has a strong will. He is tough. Besides, he is still a kid with pure heart, which hasn't been infected by authority... It is still not too late to teach him something right. He is a diamond in the rough."

"Besides, Chen Zhi values ties of friendship a lot. He is just like the king. If he can finally sit on the throne, Kingdom of Chen... can at least last for fifty years on top of the world!"

He talked slowly, looking ever so solemn.

Since there was no more secret between them, they should just talk about serious matters. Besides, what they were talking now concerned the future of the kingdom!

In fact, that was why Zuo Wuji came to see Ye Xiao.

To plan before acting, that was Zuo Wuji's way!

Ye Xiao rolled his eyes and said, "To be honest, I am really not interested. However, since you want to do it, I will help. We are brothers after all."

Zuo Wuji was a bit surprised. He looked at Ye Xiao for a while and then slowly smiled. He said, "Xiao Xiao, aren't you afraid that I will take the power and bring misery to the world? Maybe... I will gather forces to take over the throne myself."

Ye Xiao blandly said, "First, I don't think you would do that! You are wise and smart, full of schemes, but you are not that ambitious. That explains many things already."

"So you must be quite clear about your own position. You will become a powerful figure in the court. That is a true, however, you will always be an official, loyal to a king. You won't be a king yourself! Never!"

"Second..." Ye Xiao smiled and blandly said, "Even if you do take over the throne and sit on it, it has nothing to do with me. Do it or

not, it is up to you. I don't care. If you become a king, you are still my brother. If you bring disaster to the world, you are still my brother. No matter what you do in the future, you are my brother. That is all!"

Zuo Wuji bitterly smiled. "You are unconcerned about that! Now, I am finally certain that you truly have no nostalgia to this world! Maybe you never really cared about this world, but about the world... up there!"

"Yes!" Ye Xiao just admitted it this time.

"Well, you are right about me." Zuo Wuji deeply exhaled and stretched his two legs. He said, "There is one thing I love to do the most. To try to figure out what is hidden in people's thought. To out-wit people. I will never feel tired doing such thing. However, to control the world, to be a king, to take that responsibility is never what I like!"

"When there is somebody beyond me, I can always feel respectful. As long as I remain respectful, I won't push things too hard. Besides, it is only fun to out-wit people when they are in equal position with me. If I am a king, who dares to go against my will? That must be boring."

"Besides, it is quite a tough job to be a king. There is no freedom. It is enough for me to just do something for the world and stay under the king's command. Think about it. It must feel so good to bring peace to the world! The billion people in the kingdom will have a peaceful life because of my work! That must be good!"

"That feeling of achievement... You cultivators only chase after higher cultivation. You will never understand what I long for!"

Zuo Wuji's face was glowing. He talked and talked, like he was holding the kingdom in his hands.

Ye Xiao looked at Zuo Wuji and only felt speechless.

Zuo Wuji's dream might be great in Land of Han-Yang... but for Ye Xiao, that only made him feel speechless.

Ye Xiao was nice. If other superior cultivators knew about it, they would probably just sneer at it.

Not to be king, not to be immortal, not to conquer the universe, not to be invincible...

For people like Ye Xiao, that was merely a dream. It was impenetrable.

However, Ye Xiao knew there was something people used to say in the old days, 'Different people have different aspirations'!

Zuo Wuji's aspiration... maybe was only able to reach this height.

Different people have different aspirations!

"You will succeed! You definitely will!" Ye Xiao sincerely spoke.

"I know. That is for sure!" Zuo Wuji wasn't humble at all. Ye Xiao nearly choked when he heard that.

...

# Chapter 618: Unbelievably Wise

---

[Isn't he too confident? Where does he get that unbelievable confidence?]

"I mean, what's next?" Ye Xiao said, "What is your plan? While I am still in this world, tell me and maybe I can help?"

"I think you should just stay away from this. Whatever you do, it is always loud and big. Crown Prince and Second Prince are both down. The biggest opponents are gone. The only possible opponent left is the poor and weak Third Prince. It is just a good training object for Chen Zhi..."

Zuo Wuji blandly spoke, "So, please do leave the only training object to me. It must be a piece of cake to kill Third Prince. If you kill him, I will be incomparably disappointed..."

Ye Xiao bitterly smiled. "Really? Am I that sanguinary? To be honest, Third Prince is weak and foppish, also arrogant and ignorant, but he never has done anything wrong. Why would I kill him?"

Zuo Wuji humped and said, "Haven't you check on him already?"

Ye Xiao rubbed his nose and bitterly smiled.

"What if he also did things like Second Prince? Would you stay

away from it?" Zuo Wuji coldly smiled.

Ye Xiao kept rubbing his nose.

That was hard to promise. If Third Prince was also that evil, Ye Xiao might wipe out his entire family too!

He wouldn't mind a few princes of the Kingdom of Chen dying. He wouldn't care if all the princes were dead!

"You are simply a slaughterer!" Zuo Wuji humped.

Ye Xiao suddenly laughed. "Come on, Wuji! Well... One should set a higher goal for himself. You surely need Third Prince to be a training object for Chen Zhi, however, he is not the biggest opponent. In fact, it should be the king. Well... Urh... I helped the King... A few days ago... He should be able to live for another thirty years at least!"

Zuo Wuji was gloomy. "Gosh. I don't know what to say to you know. You killed two of his sons and let him live for dozens more years. It may be a sorrowful thing for normal people, but it is absolutely a fantastic thing for a king."

"With dozens of years to live on, he can raise as many princes as he wants. Fine. Don't show that 'I am sorry' face to me. I knew this earlier. Don't look at me like that. I am not a fortune teller. I am not a magician... Gosh. The old man got home yesterday. He said something was strange. The king wiped out the Crown Prince's

Palace with fury. He killed everyone... There are a few servants and eunuchs that died in the royal house too. A few royal concubines died too, with their clans wiped out..."

"My grandpa thought there must be something disgraceful to the royal house... It must be related to Crown Prince. However, it is a sensitive topic, so he just mentioned a few words..."

What Zuo Wuji said shocked Ye Xiao.

That was a secret that had been hidden so well.

The old guys in the court actually made such a close guess according to some small things?

"Those secret missions didn't really trouble my grandpa. The only thing my grandpa kept thinking about is that... the king has been getting worse and worse in health. He should be gone soon. The old men in court all knew it and they worried about it."

"However, the king should have spat out blood and fell down in bed when he got to know all those things. It would be reasonable if he died because of it... However, after he raged up with fury yesterday, he remained perfectly well. Nothing was wrong about his physical condition. The king is fine, and there is nothing wrong with his health..."

"That is strange. My grandpa knew that the king came here and went to Ling-Bao Hall. He believes Feng Monarch, the grandmaster

of dan-making, saved the king! He must have cured the king's disease..."

"My grandpa was quite happy about it. He drank a lot and murmured about things like 'god bless the Kingdom of Chen'."

Zuo Wuji looked at Ye Xiao. "All these, is there anything wrong?"

Ye Xiao could only nod. "No. Nothing is wrong. You are right about everything!"

[What the hell are these young man and his grandpa's brains are made of? There are only a few traces shown, yet they actually conjectured the entire truth behind it. That is unbelievable. They are like monsters!]

"However, the king is never an opponent. He wasn't, isn't, and will never be... He is recovered to the prime condition. It must be easy for him to take good care of the kingdom. He is a good king with kind heart... It must be a good thing that he lives a few more years. Besides, Chen Zhi is still too young..."

Zuo Wuji frowned and said, "I think it should be perfect that Chen Zhi becomes king when he is thirty... That is his prime age. The kingdom must be in peace by then. It is a good time for him to take over the throne and create an even more peaceful and wealthy kingdom in history!"

"However, Chen Zhi can wait, I can't. The king was dying, so I

tried to save all I can for the new king. Now, I don't think I should wait for twenty years to serve the kingdom. I must stand out soon. When Chen Zhi becomes king, I should be influential in the court by then."

"I have to build up my own power group by then, to make sure everything goes well for Chen Zhi. Since the King is recovered now, nobody knows how many princes will show up in the coming days after all!"

"Besides, Chen Zhi shouldn't act low profile like he always did. It must be changed."

"Hmm. He should stand out to play a good son. The king surely needs comfort at these special days..." He kept talking about his strategy.

Ye Xiao was impressed.

Zuo Wuji must have known that Ye Xiao had fully cured the King, instead of remitting the disease. He conjectured it himself.

That was why he would come up with all those talking afterwards.

He even planned everything in the twenty years to come...

...

# Chapter 619: Solve Your Problem!

---

The plan Zuo Wuji made perfectly matched Chen Zhi's personality. It was exactly what the king would like. It was definitely a fantastic plan, which was thorough and thoughtful...

"Wuji..." Ye Xiao took in a deep breath. "Your talent... My god. Such a waste."

Zuo Wuji blandly smiled. "Stop there. I do what I like."

Ye Xiao smiled and said, "I understand. I totally do. Alright then. We are brothers. Let me do something for you."

Zu Wuji stared at him right in the eyes, "Thanks."

Ye Xiao shook his head and said, "No need to say that between brothers. However, I have something that I need to say it in advance."

"Alright," Zuo Wuji seriously spoke.

"If you fulfill your dream someday, and I need your help, you can't say no to me," Ye Xiao solemnly spoke.

"Hahaha... When I fulfill my dream, I must be old enough to say goodbye to the world. Maybe I will die before my dream comes true." Zuo Wuji laughed and then became serious. "However, I

promise! No matter what you need by then, I will say yes!"

"Good! Deal is a deal! Whoever breaks the promise becomes Lan Langlang!" Ye Xiao laughed loudly. That was the first joke he made the night.

"Alright! Becomes Lan Langlang!" Zuo Wuji laughed so happily too.

It was a very long time after this when Zuo Wuji finally knew what his promise to Ye Xiao really meant for himself!

His future was completely changed because of this promise!

"Oh right. One more thing. The important thing. I have a gift for you." Ye Xiao smiled and grabbed a jade bottle out. "There are three dan beads inside... Take them all and the problem you have will be gone in three days."

"I..." Zuo Wuji's face turned red.

Surely, he knew what the problem was.

A private problem!

Something he couldn't tell others!

Because of this disease, he was still a virgin, even though he was already nineteen... That was worse than Ye Xiao...

"Come on. I am a grandmaster dan-maker. It will work." Ye Xiao spoke in a light voice, "In fact, Wuji, you should be thankful to this disease... You know, because of it, you became who you are now. If somebody else has such a disease, he may have gone crazy long ago."

Zuo Wuji was shocked. He thought of all the hard work he had done and said, "That is right! It hurts me, but also helps me!"

"Now it will be cured! Everything will be fine. It is not late at all!" Ye Xiao blinked, talking like he was quite experienced.

Zuo Wuji blushed.

'It is not late at all!' ... That was... ahem... quite ambiguous.

Zuo Wuji would never argue with Ye Xiao at this moment. He wouldn't want Ye Xiao to take back the dan beads really...

He knew Ye Xiao would definitely do so!

That would be such a sad story of him...

Hmm. His life would be doomed!

Thus, he swallowed the three dan beads right away with tea.  
[Hmm. Let me swallow them before talking.]

[This is the most important.]

"And more. Three jade bottles, each of which has three dan beads. You take one of each and then give your future wife one of each... The last three, you keep them, in case you will need more. I am sure you will live longer as you expect!"

Ye Xiao gave Zuo Wuji three jade bottles and said, "Remember. Only one of each! Do not forget this!"

Zuo Wuji took in a deep breath. He sounded quivering, "I won't!"

He was such a smart man. He knew that the dan beads in his hands were absolutely a miracle that happened to him! It should be... a miracle for... him and his family!

Ye Xiao was a bit regretful. "I could give you a few more, but I have less than ten of these kinds of dan beads. I need to save some for Langlang. That is for sure... Three should be enough for you. Besides... Maybe I will come down to see you in the future."

Zuo Wuji looked up at him. "Hmm? You are leaving now?"

Suddenly, he felt so reluctant and sad.

"What are you doing? Why put on such a moonstruck scene. I am not leaving now. At least, I won't leave in the coming half year..." Ye Xiao wasn't sure. "When I decide to leave, I will let you know first and arrange everything well."

Zuo Wuji lowered his head and deeply sighed.

Zuo Wuji honestly had been used to hanging out with Ye Xiao in the capital. They used to be 'three lords in town', and now they were fighting for their own lives. In the future, when they all got great achievements, they should still be together like brothers forever.

[Brothers in the world.]

The world was surely Land of Han-Yang. Even though Ye Xiao was now in a higher position in the world, the Monarch of Ling-Bao Hall, the world's best dan-maker, the richest man in the world, Zuo Wuji didn't mind. He simply felt happy for Ye Xiao!

The three of them were on the same line at the beginning.

Nobody expected them to be figures. Only they supported each other.

They rose up together.

How could Zuo Wuji be jealous anyhow?

When Ye Xiao said he wanted to break the limit of this world and become No. 1 in this world, Zuo Wuji didn't know he was being serious. That was so like a joke. It had been too long since the last man in the Land of Han-Yang flew up to the upper realm in history!

Now, Zuo Wuji heard that Ye Xiao was actually going to leave this world and there was not much time before he left. Suddenly, he felt so sad!

Although Ye Xiao was still around, when he said he would leave this world, Zuo Wuji's heart was filled with sad feeling of separation.

No matter how calm Zuo Wuji was, he couldn't suppress that feeling in his chest!

...

# Chapter 620: Slip of Tongue?

---

Even though Ye Xiao tried to ease the tension by running a gag, it failed. After all, nobody knew when he would come back once he was gone!

After Zuo Wuji left, Ye Xiao felt a bit sad about it.

He must be affected by Zuo Wuji's emotion...

The next few days were peaceful.

Ye Xiao was preparing to defend the attack from the two great sects. However, he had waited for over ten days now. The attack didn't happen.

He was curious. [They did it so quickly last time!]

[Why are they so slow this time?]

[Is it... they need one more month to prepare for the next strike?]

[This is awkwardly peaceful.]

Xiu-Er and Wan-Er had visited him five times in seven days. They didn't say anything, but they looked nervous and worried.

No matter how powerful they were, when it was about the Agerasia Dan, they fell in. Women all cared about appearance.

When something concerned 'beauty', women could never ignore it!

Ye Xiao understood this, but he just kept comforting them. "I am going to make some marvelous level Agerasia Dan beads this time. It may not be unique in the future, but definitely unique in the history. To produce dan beads in such quality, it required high-quality materials, skillful dan-maker, and also good luck. Even though I am this good at dan-making, I failed three times. I was so close yesterday, but a minor mistake led to its failure... I only got a stove of half-done dan beads..."

The two ladies were shocked. Xiu-Er said, "Master Feng, is it short for materials? What should we do. We have collected all ten thousand years old Snow Lotus in this world. It is impossible to collect more in a short time..."

Wan-Er said, "If you are not confident about making that high quality Agerasia Dan, why not just use Snow Lotus less than ten thousand years old? Maybe it is really too hard to make it with the prime quality. In fact, as long as they are in supreme level, we will happily accept it!"

Ye Xiao was annoyed and he coldly spoke, "Ladies, are you questioning my capability now? You actually asked me to make lower quality dan beads. I would rather just make one dan bead in perfection, than make lots of commonplace things. You disappointed me!"

Wan and Xiu hurriedly apologized. Xiu-Er said, "We didn't mean that at all. Master Feng, you successfully made the Heaven Seizing Supreme Dan, and you have made so many supreme dan beads. You are definitely the most capable dan-maker in the world... We truly cannot provide more ten thousand years old Snow Lotus, but it is surely our fault! We would never look down upon you..."

People wouldn't believe Wan and Xiu would talk so humbly like this. Master Bai, Ling Wuxie, people in House of the Chaotic Storms, people in those sects in Land of Han-Yang, and people in the sects in Qing-Yun Realm, none of them would believe this!

Xiu of the Heavens and Wan of the Clouds actually begged so humbly?

Women could do anything to become beautiful!

Ye Xiao felt good, but didn't dare to show it. He spoke in a deep voice, "Ladies, relax. I failed several times, and over a dozen Snow Lotus are wasted. However, I am confident now. There will be no more failure. I think I will have the Agerasia Dan beads by the day after tomorrow..."

Wan-Er and Xiu-Er were so looking forward when they heard that.

Ye Xiao wouldn't take out the dan beads for them. If he took them out so soon... they would see him as a monster!

That was something even gods couldn't do, yet he did it!

Moreover, if they knew it was so easy for him to make supreme dan beads, they would target him all the time.

The two ladies were so eager. Ten days were like ten years for them. Let them wait a few more days and they wouldn't think it strange.

They would actually think that it was too slow!

That was human nature.

Ye Xiao was good at this.

In fact, it was not that he didn't want to give them lower quality dan beads, he just couldn't! Brother Egg only made good stuffs. It worked so concentratedly on it this time. There would never be a low quality thing!

However, Ye Xiao gave them different dan beads! Heaven Seizing Supreme Dan!

He gave them twenty beads this time!

That made it thirty-four already! He had given them thirty-four Heaven Seizing Dan beads in total!

It had been only half a month, five and a half months before they were due!

Now he gave them a lot of dan beads, and Wan-Er and Xiu-Er were so thrilled and happy that they nearly passed out.

Heaven Seizing Supreme Dan was the only thing that the two ladies wanted as much as Agerasia Dan!

[With all these Heaven Seizing Supreme Dan beads... Master will definitely...]

Ye Xiao clearly knew it. When he gave them the twenty dan beads, he casually asked, "Master Bai should almost be recovered, right?"

That was so casual like he was asking 'how's your day?'

However, that causal question could easily get the answer.

Especially when the two ladies were thrilled like crazy.

As expected, Xiu-Er spoke without hesitation, "Your Heaven Seizing Supreme Dan beads are fantastic. Master has been recovered nearly fifty percent. If he takes these twenty..."

Suddenly, she stopped.

Wan-Er loudly coughed, trying to stop her.

Xiu-Er's face gradually turned red.

That was red with anger!

She stared at Ye Xiao.

[You prick! You set it up for my words!]

[And I fell in it again...]

[Why would I use 'again'?]

[Son of a bxtch!]

Ye Xiao nodded and pretended that he didn't see her angry eyes. He spoke in a deep voice, "Not a surprising answer though. I have worked with full effort. It should work well... Hmm. It should take me three days to finish the rest. As I said, it should work well, since I have been working with full effort."

Wan-Er and Xiu-Er took a breath out of relief. [He didn't stick on this. What a surprise.] They didn't care about his bragging at all. Maybe they didn't think he was bragging. That was the truth. Even in Human Realm Upon Heavens, there was no dan-maker who could make supreme dan beads like making sugar beads casually,

but Feng Zhiling could.

...

# Chapter 621: My Woman!

---

However, he surely knew what Xiu-Er was going to say after ‘if he takes these twenty...’ That was obvious.

Fourteen dan beads, he recovered nearly fifty percent.

The three of them shared them. Two or four for the two ladies, it didn’t matter. No matter how, the twenty dan beads would surely make him fully recovered...

That meant Master Bai only needed about thirty dan beads. It should be more than enough now, but he had asked for fifty!

There were about twenty dan beads that they didn’t need.

In fact, Master Bai didn’t really try to get more than he needed. He reckoned that at least forty of Heaven Seizing Supreme Dan beads were enough for him to fully recover. Wan and Xiu should at least need four for each.

Fifty wasn’t really that safe.

Master Bai didn’t know that Feng Zhiling would actually successfully make the Heaven Seizing Supreme Dan beads so fast. He thought it was impossible to make fifty dan beads within half a year, no matter how capable Feng Zhiling was.

Unexpectedly, Feng Zhiling made lots of Heaven Seizing Supreme Dan beads within a short time. He brought hope to this plan.

When Master Bai took the first dan bead, he found that the Heaven Seizing Supreme Dan bead from Feng Zhiling was actually much more efficient than he expected. That was why there were twenty dan beads left at the moment!

If Ye Xiao brought up the topic about the twenty more dan beads, this deal might be closed in advance!

House of the Chaotic Storms wouldn't blame Feng Zhiling or Ling-Bao Hall at all!

That was why Xiu-Er didn't want Ye Xiao to know the truth.

The twenty more dan beads were extremely important for Master Bai really!

Heaven Seizing Supermen Dan beads were powerful in Human Realm Upon Heavens!

If they returned with twenty of these dan beads, nobody would dare to mess with them.

If Feng Monarch stopped making dan beads for them now...

Master Bai would lose far more than just the twenty dan beads!

However, Feng Zhiling acted like he didn't know at all. Instead, he promised to finish all the dan beads in three days! Xiu-Er was surprised and happy about it for sure!

"We, House of the Chaotic Storm, feel grateful for your great favor. We will take leave now."

Xiu-Er didn't dare to stay longer. Feng Monarch was so smart. If he got any other information from her now, she would never be able to make it up for Master Bai...

So they hurriedly left.

Ye Xiao looked at the figures of their backs, smiling.

How would he not know the truth. However, he valued promises the most in his life. He promised he would give them fifty dan beads, so he would give them fifty, no less, no more. Even though Master Bai might become his biggest enemy in the future, he would never break his promise for that. He would disdain himself if he did!

For him, to keep a promise was much more important than keeping twenty Heaven Seizing Supreme Dan beads!

...

"You are saying... after you said it, Feng Monarch still didn't say anything about it?" Master Bai was dressed in white clothes and golden hat in the bamboo forest. His face was like jade and his eyes were profound, like there was ocean and stars in them.

Since he started to recover, he was changing bit by bit, turning to his prime status!

It happened fast. Master Bai became more experienced too.

"That's right." Xiu-Er lowered her head with a pale face.

She knew that she had done something seriously wrong.

That was why she reported it to Master Bai as soon as she returned.

"That's alright." Ling Wuxie wanted to say something, but Master Bai stopped him. Before he said anything, Master Bai took a breath out with relief and said with a smile, "Feng Zhiling won't stick on such a thing. You didn't make anything worse. Why are you becoming craven now, Xiu-Er? You are Xiu of the Heavens! Come on!"

Xiu-Er realized Master Bai was joking now, so she felt relieved. She said, "I truly shouldn't have said that. It concerns Master's future after all. I shouldn't be so reckless."

Master Bai laughed. "You silly girl. Even if Feng Monarch doesn't

want to make the rest for me, so what? Who on earth can repudiate a debt from me? You are blinded by that minor things. If you should be punished, that should be underestimating your master!"

Xiu-Er thought deeper and agreed!

[There are no more than ten people in the universe who dares to repudiate a debt from Master!]

[Feng Zhiling is absolutely not included!]

[How would he dare!]

[Even if he is so stupid to do so, it would never end up as he wishes! I was being silly!]

And then she laughed. She didn't feel troubled anymore.

Xiu-Er and Wan-Er left to their room. Ling Wuxie said, "That was not true. There may not be many people who dares to break a promise to you, but Feng Zhiling must be one!"

Master Bai smiled. "Certainly, Feng Zhiling dares to mess with me that way! Even though you don't, he does!"

"Then why can't I say it?" Ling Wuxie was unsatisfied. He was annoyed because Master Bai didn't let him talk, and also looked

down upon him!

"You tell the truth at any time any place. Do you know if you said it, Xiu-Er would be sad for a long time!" Master Bai looked at him and said, "Xiu-Er is my woman. She did something wrong, so what? I will take the responsibility myself! If a man cannot make his woman happy and only let her live in sorrow and guilt... he must be an awful man!"

Ling Wuxie's face turned red. He raised up his hands and said, "Okay... You are right... I was wrong..."

...

# Chapter 622: Three Days

---

Master Bai tapped his shoulder and said, "Wuxie, as a man, no matter what evil things you do outside, how high key you are, you have to be honest and gentle to your own woman, sincerely!"

"That is the most basic rule that a man should follow!"

Master Bai's smile was warm.

Ling Wuxie felt respectful all of a sudden.

Bai Chen said, "There is definitely a loss because of what she said though. Feng Monarch will do something in return for sure, as I said. He made two dan beads with those materials a few days ago... When he finishes making it, he will definitely have more than fifty... He is truly the most capable dan-maker I have ever known in my life. I wouldn't believe it if I didn't see this with my own eyes. There is actually such a talented dan-maker in the world, in such a low class realm."

Ling Wuxie interrupted, "Stop. Stop it now. I know he is a marvelous dan-maker. I know. I agree. But this is not a good time to praise him, is it? Just go on with what he may go after finishing the fifty dan beads, will you?"

"I thought he may give us a few more as a gift after the fifty dan beads. It won't be many. Maybe eight or ten... Other than that, he may also give us something else."

"Stop it. Stop. What the hell are you talking about? Eight or ten? Not many? You think that is a small favor? And you think he will give you something else? Come on, Bai Chen. Are you serious? Don't you know what Heaven Seizing Supreme Dan means? Eight or ten? Even one of it is already a great favor! Since when did you become so ignorant and arrogant?" Ling Wuxie was surprised.

"Oh, for everybody else, Heaven Seizing Supreme Dan must be a priceless treasure. However, for him, a grandmaster dan-maker, it means nothing. Maybe it is too easy for him to make it, or maybe he isn't well informed enough to know the true value of Heaven Seizing Supreme Dan. Different man has different fate. Supreme Dan means a great deal to us, but for him, it is normal!" Master Bai explained.

"That's true. As long as he has enough materials, supreme dan isn't hard to have for him. Hmm... So how many supreme dan beads do you think he will give us when we leave?" Ling Wuxie asked.

"None. What Xiu-Er said today ruined it all. He is so smart. He certainly knows that we won't need to use the twenty Heaven Seizing Supreme Dan beads. However, he didn't say anything about it. Apparently, those twenty dan beads are all that he will give up as gifts."

"He won't need to give us anything else, since we will have the twenty more Heaven Seizing Supreme Dan beads. If he gives us more, it will only show how valueless his dan beads are. Feng Zhiling is too smart to do such a stupid thing."

Bai Chen sighed. "In other words... her words... ruined at least eight people's fast upgrading chances! If she didn't say that, we may get at least thirty other kinds of Supreme Dan beads. What a shame. However, that is destiny. We can never ask more."

Ling Wuxie laughed. "Twenty more is already a surprise. Besides, I guess you won't need to use up all that you have now, right?"

Bai Chen laughed. "One should never be too greedy."

And then he said, "Since so, me and you, we shall go visit Feng Monarch in three days." He half closed his eyes and said, "When he said he will finish it in three days, he wanted me to know... that I should go see him by then!"

"He knows that we should have a meeting soon! Maybe it is going to be the last chance we meet each other!"

Bai Chen smiled.

Ling Wuxie said, "That man is interesting."

"Indeed..." Bai Chen thought for a while and said. His eyes were glowing.

...

Three days after!

Xiu-Er and Wan-Er came to Ling-Bao Hall as promised.

"Feng Monarch." The two ladies were so solemn, speaking in an official tone.

Two men hid in the clouds up in the sky.

"Greetings, ladies." Feng Monarch looked tired. He hadn't slept for a few days. Now, he nearly lied on the chair with a pale face. He said, "Finally! It's done!"

Wan and Xiu were so happy to hear that. "Really?"

"Why would I lie?" Ye Xiao smiled and took out eight jade bottles. He seemed exhausted. "All here. You have taken thirty-four, so there are sixteen more in these bottles. Fifty dan beads, no less no more! You can count it if you like."

The two ladies tried so hard to suppress the excitement in their hearts. They knew Feng Zhiling wouldn't lie about that, but they still didn't want to risk it. They took over the bottles and started to check and count. After it was done, they took a long breath out with relief. "Feng Monarch, you are an honorable man!"

They looked at each other and said, "Now that you have kept your promise and made us all the dan beads. House of the Chaotic Storm is grateful. We appreciate your hard work. We have

something else to do, so I guess we should take leave now."

Their master would come down to talk, so they decided to leave.

"Wait." Ye Xiao smiled and stopped them. He said in a low voice, "Maybe I am never going to see you two in the future, ladies... No matter what, we have known each other for a long time. It was lots of fun even when we were fighting against each other. These days, you two have helped me a great deal. Friends or enemies, time flies. I guess we are both friends and enemies at the same time."

The two ladies were shocked. They looked at him with confusion. [What is he talking about? Is it a gag or something?]

Ye Xiao took in a deep breath and said, "Look. You may think I am greedy because of what I have done these days... I asked for everything good that I heard and saw. I did everything to get what I wanted. I guess you must feel uncomfortable about it."

...

# Chapter 623: Yin Yang Soul Dan!

---

Wan-Er and Xiu-Er didn't know what to say. That was difficult to respond.

If they said no, they were lying. If they said yes, they didn't really feel it now...

"Ladies, you are both from the upper realm. You may stay in this mortal world for many years, but you always know that you are beyond all of us. You don't care about mortal things here. You wouldn't know the suffering for mortal people like me to climb up step by step." Ye Xiao sighed. "Although you two had most of your cultivation restrained, you still didn't need anything mortal here in this world... Those priceless materials, treasures, I believe you two have never really thought highly of any."

Wan-Er and Xiu-Er finally nodded lightly to agree.

That was true. They never did.

They were from a higher realm, so they had more profound sight. That was natural.

For example, if a one hundred years old Snow Ginseng could provide ten years of cultivation in Land of Han-Yang, while one normal grass could provide one month of cultivation in Human Realm Upon Heavens, the two ladies would definitely choose the grass instead of the one hundred years old Snow Ginseng.

Two different worlds had different concepts of cultivation.

The ten years cultivation in Land of Han-Yang against the one month cultivation was in Human Realm Upon Heavens...

That was a huge difference!

Two totally different concepts!

"However, those materials are our hopes. We depend on them to improve ourselves!" Ye Xiao gloomily spoke, "That is why no matter what it takes, I will do whatever I can to get more materials from you... It is a good thing that I got them. No matter whether we are enemies or friends, no matter whether you are willing to give them to me or not, I got them. That is the only thing that matters."

Master Bai smiled and spoke to Ling Wuxie in the sky, "Feng Zhiling is not talking to the two girls."

Ling Wuxie nodded. "I know. He is talking to you. Maybe he wants to give you an explanation."

"It doesn't matter if he doesn't. I understand." Bai Chen sighed. "To fight for a path to get beyond the boundary of this world... It is just too difficult!"

Ling Wuxie was a bit sorrowful.

Feng Monarch spoke again.

"... Since I did get what I wanted, I have prepared something as a gift before you leave... A small gift."

Ye Xiao took out a space ring and grabbed two jade bottles out of it.

"Six dan beads in each bottle. You can take them now." Ye Xiao took a long breath out and said, "The dan beads I have that can improve cultivation or cure wounds... I guess you don't need them, considering how powerful you are... However, the six dan beads here can be your savior when you are really going to die!"

Back from death!

Xiu of the Heavens and Wan of the Clouds were both motivated!

If those dan beads could really save their lives when they were going to die, that was a great favor!

Was it true?

"May I ask, Monarch, what is this dan?" Xiu-Er asked confusedly.

They surely wouldn't easily trust him. They were so powerful now that they should know much more than the people in this world.

However, Feng Monarch actually showed them something they couldn't understand. They wouldn't easily trust it. In fact, they simply couldn't believe it.

"The six dan beads are Yin Yang Soul Dan!" Ye Xiao spoke in a low voice. "Martial world in Human Realm Upon Heavens must be more dangerous than here... Ladies, you may be invincible in this world, even in Qing-Yun Realm, but not in Human Realm Upon Heavens... When you go back, please give Master Bai one bottle... And you two can share the six dan beads in the other bottle. Just take one dan bead with you when you are out for a mission or something. No matter how dangerous it is to you, you will survive with it."

"If you truly are in a fatal situation, like you are going to have both your body and soul vanish... or if you have to explode yourself to solve the problem, just swallow one dan bead and operate your martial art to digest it quickly."

"Swallow the dan bead and you can at least save the spirit essence of yourself, even if your body is completely vanished..." Ye Xiao gloomily spoke, "As long as Master Bai swallows one dan bead too and goes to the place where you died when you swallow the dan bead in a month, he can definitely sense your spirit essence..."

"I believe no matter how far away he is, he can always get to the place he wants to go within one month, right? Even in Human

Realm Upon Heavens."

Ye Xiao solemnly spoke, "I believe Master Bai is capable enough to bring you back from death as long as he can find your spirit essence!"

He finally finished it.

Wan of the Clouds and Xiu of the Heavens who were in front of Ye Xiao, even Master Bai and Ling Wuxie who were in the sky, were all stunned!

When Ye Xiao talked about the ladies' death, he talked like they were definitely going to die in the future. If the dan beads were really that brilliant like he said, it must be something against the nature's rule!

Even after self-explosion, they could still leave a piece of their spirit essence?

That meant... they could use self-explosion as a powerful attack!

In Human Realm Upon Heavens, as long as there was still a piece of spirit essence, they weren't dead! They wouldn't die!

Three dan beads meant three chances!

They hadn't ever seen, even heard about such wonderful dan!

"We owe him a huge one this time," Bai Chen murmured in the sky. He sounded like complaining, but in fact he was so happy. He would love to owe Feng Zhiling anything as long as it was good for Wan and Xiu!

Ling Wuxie was a bit jealous when he got to know the dan beads. "Heavens and hell. That is some absolute great stuff. Bai Chen, you have to give me two dan beads..."

Bai Chen rudely spoke, "Get off! I'll give you not a damn thing!"

...

# Chapter 624: Leave With Joy!

---

Ling Wuxie was definitely upset. "God damn it. I came here working so hard. Am I not doing it for you? You conscienceless prick! You don't even give me two dan beads? You are definitely the kind that will cut your friend for women!"

Bai Chen looked at him with disdainfulness and blandly said, "Shut up! Your sister!"

Ling Wuxie was annoyed, but he stopped talking.

Bai Chen spoke out the two words he didn't want to hear the most again...

That was embarrassing!

Wan-Er and Xiu-Er were both stunned!

When they took over the two bottles, their hands were shaking. "Thank you, Feng Monarch, for the great favor!"

They knew exactly how important the dan beads in the two bottles were to them!

People in Human Realm Upon Heavens might not dare to hurt Bai Chen, but there were plenty of them who dared to hurt the two ladies!

They weren't accepted in that world as Bai Chen's women after all.

Nobody liked them there. They couldn't be his wives or concubines.

The stress and danger they were about to face were countless!

There were lots of people up there wanted to kill them both, no matter for what.

However, with the dan beads, they could at least survive three times!

No gift could be more valuable than this.

"Feng Monarch, we were enemies back then..." Wan-Er was a bit embarrassed. Her face was red. "We even made quite some troubles for you. Now we have such a great gift from you... I feel regret."

"I guess we are going to be enemies in the future too." Ye Xiao laughed and said, "In fact, I have never thought about being friends with you... Even though one day I will go to Human Realm Upon Heavens, I will still be your master's enemy, not friend!"

The ladies were shocked.

They didn't expect Feng Zhiling would be so frank.

"However, even so, I still need to give you this as a thanks for what you have done for me. Besides... when we meet in the future as enemies to each other, even though we will have a fatal fight against each other, I hope that you will die in my hands, not others."

Ye Xiao spoke in a heavy voice, "Do not die in other's hands!"

Wan-Er and Xiu-Er stayed silent for a while. They knew he was trying to let them feel better to take the dan beads. They understood. Both of them bowed with gratitude, "Thank you, Feng Monarch!"

They stood up and solemnly spoke, "Feng Monarch, you are being so kind. We should take it cheekily then. No matter we are going to be friends or enemies in the future, we will always remember what you did for us today!"

"If we are friends, we will definitely be honest to you full-heartedly. If we are enemies, we will not show any weakness as it is disrespecting. We would love to be your enemy, also your friend!" Wan-Er and Xiu-Er both said so.

"Good! Well said!" Ye Xiao laughed out loud. "When that day comes, I won't be merciful either. I never show mercy to my enemy ever. Ladies, you must watch out. I am quite cunning. Oh right, you have experience of it..."

The ladies smiled sincerely, like two blossoming splendid flowers.

No matter how greedy and vile they thought Feng Monarch was earlier... they changed their minds now!

They even felt a bit guilty for thinking about Feng Zhiling like that.

"Then... we should get going?" The two ladies bowed. That was a sincere bow.

"Wait."

He stopped them again.

The two ladies just turned around, and they turned around again.

They saw Feng Monarch smiling and speaking, "I mean... Ladies... You are going to miss something most splendid here. Why so soon? Don't you want the Agerasia Dan now?"

He then turned over his hand, and two more crystal jade bottles appeared. In the bottles, one supreme dan bead in each bottle with dan clouds rolling around, like hundreds of flowers blossoming at the same time!

"Ahh!" Xiu-Er couldn't help exclaiming with joy! She nearly

rushed over and held Feng Zhiling tight!

She was so excited!

They were so surprised!

They were so shocked!

They were... so... everything!

After they got the dan beads, they left with joy like two happy birds!

Ye Xiao smiled warmly watching the two ladies leaving happily.

No matter whether they were enemies or friends in the future, he felt that... it was always right thing to make a girl's dream come true.

Girls were after all... the most beautiful beings in the world.

"I mean... Bai Bai." Ling Wuxie rubbed his lower jaw with confusion on his face. "I feel like there is something wrong in this. Don't you have that feeling?"

Master Bai asked, "What is wrong? I don't feel anything."

Ling Wuxie said, "He kept giving things to the two girls. Look at his roguish face. Friends and enemies. Isn't it obvious... Does he want to have your girls? You should watch out a little... Don't let him snatch your women... He is so good at pleasing girls. Don't you see Xiu-Er nearly wanted to be friends to that guy there? Hey, hey..."

He laughed weirdly after talking.

Master Bai was annoyed. He slapped on Ling Wuxie's head and said with anger, "Your sister! You should put down all those evil and vicious thoughts in your head! You shameless prick! Can't you just be like an honorable man? Just follow me down to him now!"

Ling Wuxie held his head. He was speechless.

"You said it again... And you hit me... I was just joking... Look how loyal the two girls are to you. I guess nobody can take them away from you... You miser! You will definitely kill your friend for women! Your sister!"

As he was murmuring in a low voice, Master Bai had flew down to Ye Xiao.

Ling Wuxie followed him, annoyed.

...

Ye Xiao was deep in thought after he saw off Xiu of the Clouds

and Wan of the Heavens. He silently sat on his chair, like he was thinking about something, also waiting for something.

He was even a bit disappointed somehow.

And then he sighed lightly.

At this moment, a clear voice sounded behind him. "Brother Feng, why sigh as there is nothing to sigh for? What on earth can make you sigh now?"

Ye Xiao didn't look back but only answered with a smile, "Things can't all go as I wish. I sighed for a certain reason. Brother Bai, you are smart and wise. Why don't you have a guess why I sighed?"

...

# Chapter 625: Why Sigh?

---

As Ye Xiao spoke, he slowly turned around. What he saw were two guys standing behind him!

Master Bai and Ling Wuxie!

Ling Wuxie was wearing cyan clothes like smoke, while Master Bai was in white like snow. They stood there and made a beautiful scene, even though they were men!

Ling Wuxie rolled up his eyes and sighed. He thought, [These two are truly destined opponents. They actually started the logomachy right when they just met each other. That is a question that I definitely don't know how to answer.]

[You sat here comfortably and suddenly sighed. Who on earth knows why you sighed?]

[You ask me why you sighed? Am I a worm in your belly or something? How the hell do I know...]

[Luckily, you asked Bai Chen, not me!]

[I guess I will just stay here and watch this play. No matter who wins, I won't lose... It must be fun...]

Master Bai smiled and then paced a few steps. He blandly spoke,

"I think, Brother Feng sighed, because you felt disappointed, you felt lost, and... you felt despondent. You have all these feelings, not because of others, but because of me!"

"Because of me, Bai Chen, you sighed, Feng Monarch," Master Bai affirmatively spoke.

Ling Wuxie was speechless.

[Because of you?]

[My heavens. Who do you think you are? You really love yourself too much... He just sighed, and you are so sure it was because of you? Can't he sigh for the leaving of the two girls?]

[If I were him, I would definitely sigh for the two girls!]

[If I gave them a lot of things but didn't get a hug in return, I would sigh. All he got was a few stupid words about friends and enemies and things like that. What else could he sigh for?]

[He sighed for this!]

[I am damn right!]

[Absolutely!]

[I don't want to embarrass you so I won't say it! Don't see me as a fool!]

However, when he heard what Feng Zhiling said, he was even more speechless.

"That's right. I sighed because of you. You do know me, Brother Bai." Feng Monarch just admitted it.

He admitted that he, as a man, sighed for another man who knew him well!

Ling Wuxie felt it extremely baffling.

[What the hell is going on?]

[You didn't see him! You could never notice us up there, because you are still too weak to do that.]

[Why the hell would you sigh for a man right after two beautiful girls left you?]

[Are you in love with Bai Chen?]

[Bai Chen doesn't even like me, such a handsome guy! How would he like you? A low class native country man?]

[Pah! What am I talking about. Even if Bai Chen likes me, I won't... Pah! What the hell is wrong with me! Anyway, I guess Feng Zhiling must be sick! He must be totally sick in the head!]

Feng Monarch continued, "Brother Bai, since you know I sighed for you, you must know why I sighed for you?"

Ling Wuxie was totally lost this time!

[What the fxck...]

[Is this still a conversation between two human beings?]

[Why does it so look like two psychos playing puzzles?]

[Yo, guess what I am thinking about?]

[Yo, I know you are thinking about that...]

[You are damn right. Guess why I am thinking about that...]

[What the bloody hell!]

Ling Wuxie could only feel headache.

If Feng Zhiling really was in love with Bai Chen, it would be much easier for Ling Wuxie to understand the current situation!

[I know Bai Chen is smarter than me, but I don't think he is that much smarter than me... He actually knows what Feng Monarch is thinking? He actually knows what Feng Zhiling wants?]

[This is... I must be dreaming!]

[Wait! That is a conversation between two guys!]

[Feng Monarch... Is he also that smart like Bai Chen?]

[If he is, then doesn't it mean he is also much cleverer than me?]

[Why would I say 'also'?]

[Bloody heavens!]

[I am the only stupid one among the three of us?]

He was embarrassed, but he stood there maintaining a cool posture with his mouth shut, saying no words...

He knew whatever he said would be deemed as wrong.

Suddenly, Feng Zhiling and Bai Chen looked at him at the same time.

In their eyes, there was a sneer. They were expressing their thought, [What a fool!]

"Damn it! How dare you call me a fool?" Ling Wuxie burst with anger!

The two gentlemen looked at him with surprise. They obviously didn't know he would actually say it. They looked at each other and their eyes were still smiling.

They read something clear in each other's eyes!

They were expressing the same thing. [The fool actually knows what we mean by looking at our eyes... Such a clever fool... I never knew before...]

Ling Wuxie was completely defeated. He was disdained.

He walked to the table and made some tea for himself... He drank alone...

"Just tell me when you finish this." He then sat straight up on the chair facing the wall.

[I don't see you. That should be fine now...]

[I am a fool. I don't understand your evil minds... Alright?]

[Humph!]

Master Bai gently spoke, "I surely know you sighed because of me, Brother Feng. And I also know why you sighed."

"I would love to hear it." Ye Xiao smiled.

"For such a long time, you thought I am your final opponent!" Bai Chen smiled and slowly spoke, "I guess you started to think so before I noticed it!"

"Brother Feng, you can stir up any disturbance in the world. You control the world here! You bring up chaos by waving your hand. Compared to House of the Chaotic Storms, you are much more capable of it!"

"You are running Ling-Bao Hall, but actually doing the same thing as I do. You are... controlling the situation of the world."

"If what I did was to go right, then what you did was to push me back to the left!"

"That is what you have been doing."

Bai Chen thought for a while and then said, "As a civilian organization, Ling-Bao Hall influenced the war, and the national affair, and even the situation of the entire Land of Han-Yang, including the different clans and sects in the martial world."

"Brother Feng, you even mobilized both the legal and illegal forces in the martial world!"

...

# Chapter 626: Hammer and Sword

---

"Those things that you seemed irrelevant to Ling-Bao Hall, especially those concerned to national affair and the war. They didn't seem like something that can be affected by a private business... however, if we think deeper about it, those things were all related to Ling-Bao Hall!"

"Such achievement. Brother Feng, you only used Ling-Bao Hall to get it done, and you did it within only one year... I have to be impressed and I shall admire you for that."

"With such capability, Brother Feng, you are incomparable in this world! The way you deal with things is significant!"

Master Bai blandly spoke, "However... your opponent, is me! House of the Chaotic Storms!"

"If I am not the owner of House of the Chaotic Storms... if Wan-Er and Xiu-Er are just two ordinary girls in this land, even though they are still powerful, the House of the Chaotic Storms would definitely be destroyed by you!"

"However, that is the problem. No matter how smart and wise you are, how profound you are, what you can do means barely anything in front of my absolute power!"

"You knew it, but it was an unchangeable fact!"

Master Bai smiled and his eyebrows raised up a bit.

Ye Xiao was listening to Master Bai concentratedly. Suddenly, he felt that the raised eyebrows of Bai Chen were like two hidden cyan dragons flying up!

That was significant pride that was like dragons flying in the firmament!

Ye Xiao frowned. He was emulative! He didn't want to admit defeat!

Bai Chen suddenly felt the vigor of Feng Monarch at the same time.

The glow shined in Feng Zhiling's eyes were full of pride, looking down upon the entire firmament!

That was... unyielding vigor! Absolute pride! Absolute... confidence!

All he could read was, [I am not any weaker than you!]

That feeling made him stop talking for a while after all that he said.

Everything was brought to silence.

"That's right. I couldn't do anything," Ye Xiao blandly spoke.

Bai Chen smiled. "So, no matter what you tried, what you did, what you planned, you have been under my suppression! No matter in what aspect... you were suppressed by the House of the Chaotic Storms.

"You don't like it, but you were helpless.

"Because what suppressed you is my absolute power! Even though you are capable, you are not as capable as I am. You are far weaker.

"Under that suppression, you kept struggling and fighting! You wanted to ease the suppression, but only to find no matter what you tried, you couldn't do it.

"The absolute power we have is beyond the limitation of this world! You... You are just fighting against a god with all that you can gather in this mortal world!

"You looked powerful and loud, but you were in fact foolish and you knew would never win!

"You knew there was no hope, but you didn't yield. You even became more and more combative!

"My suppression made you so. It forced the combative ness out of you! It aroused your absolute confidence... When you face an enemy you can never defeat but you never give up, you fight more

and more vigorous!

"When you face others in the future, what will you be like?

"You will be proud, confident, fearless and aggressive! You didn't back off when you were fighting against me... You always had hope in your heart. When you face the others... you won't fear them at all!

"The absolute power of the House of the Chaotic Storms may crash all the others in this world, even in Qing-Yun Realm, except you! For you, it spurs you up and up!

"It made you who you are today!

"You are unique in the ten thousand years history!

"Now that things are changed and we need to leave this world, Land of Han-Yang will be your own stage now! But... you have no opponents here.

"When we leave, you will only feel unaccustomed... Because there is nobody in this world who could make you really strike!

"It was like the suppression suddenly disappeared when you are used to it already! Maybe you will feel excited, thrilled, and happy, but when you realize that you didn't defeat that suppression and it vanished just like that, you will get lost for a certain period of time!

"Especially you! Such a proud man. What you have been thinking... must be 'if only Master Bai won't leave but stay here to be my opponent forever'.

"That is why you sighed.

"Royal house, the world, the martial world or anything else... Maybe there are still people who can threaten your life. However, there is really none... that you can't defeat!"

Bai Chen spoke in a low voice, "Feng Monarch, sometimes, when a hammer strikes down, it may crush many things... However, the thing that the hammer doesn't crush, will become a sharp sword eventually! It will be sharp and invincible!"

"I am glad that I can be the hammer! I am also disappointed that I didn't crush you!"

"I thought that I could easily destroy everything in this world, however, no matter how hard I strike, how I continually strike... I can't break your confidence!"

"That is why... I would love to be your opponent!"

...

# Chapter 627: Dare Not to Bet!

---

Bai Chen spoke in a heavy voice, "Surely, you are my opponent in the Land of Han-Yang!"

Ye Xiao listened to him carefully and finally he said with a low voice, "You will find that I am your opponent not only in Land of Han-Yang!"

"Maybe someday, you will be too weak to be my opponent!" Ye Xiao raised his head while looking at Bai Chen with sharp eyes.

In Bai Chen's eyes, it shined sharp glow and he smiled. "I will wait then! If you really are going to be so powerful, I will be looking at you, admiring you."

"When that day comes, I will show you... no mercy!"

Bai Chen blandly spoke.

"The same to you. I won't show you any mercy!" Ye Xiao laughed. "Wait and see. I will be the one to defeat you!"

He spoke in a heavy voice, "In any aspect!"

Master Bai laughed!

The next moment, he said in a low voice, "However, for what you

gave me earlier, I will never forget to be grateful! Enemies or friends, I will never forget what you did!"

Master Bai knew that he owed Feng Zhiling a great deal deep in his heart, as Wan-Er and Xiu-Er got those dan beads from Feng Zhiling!

That was his responsibility now!

Those were good stuffs he would dream for.

"Brother Bai, you are being too polite now." Ye Xiao blandly spoke, "They have helped me a lot, so I gave them a few dan beads in return before they leave with you. That is all. It really isn't about you at all. Don't bear it in mind. Brother Bai you are being too serious on this. That makes me feel ashamed!"

Master Bai was calm as he solemnly spoke, "Thanks!"

That was extremely sincere!

Ye Xiao was a bit surprised, and then he answered, "You are welcome!"

That was also solemn and sincere! He also felt Master Bai's special feeling for Wan-Er and Xiu-Er.

He was doing what a man should do.

Ling Wuxie made a long sigh. He looked downhearted.

He felt that he had already lost the bet already...

He watched the two men start to show respect and admiration to each other...

[Holy heavens! Aren't they enemies?]

[To be friends and also enemies, huh? This is to be friends definitely not enemies!]

In fact, they were actually treating each other as the biggest enemy now!

To respect and protect one's enemy was to respect oneself furthest!

Ye Xiao gave them the dan beads, because he knew it clearly.

Master Bai agreed to whatever Ye Xiao asked for earlier, because he knew it clearly too.

[I will let you become great! I will wait until you become great! I will wait till the day you and me fight in the firmament!]

[I believe no matter how strong you become, I will become stronger! I will never lose!]

[Definitely not!]

[I will sweep all difficulties in front of you! I will take care of your concerns behind you! I will help you ascend to the upper realm! Wait for me! Wait for the day when me and you fight in the firmament! I would love to do all this, because I know I will win!]

[I definitely will!]

...

From this moment, they completely took each other as their life-long rivals!

What they wanted in their lives, was to defeat the one another!

Master Bai wouldn't slack even when he was back to Human Realm Upon Heavens, because in this low realm, Feng Zhiling could totally stand up to him as an equal!

Now that he was in such a dominant position, he wouldn't want to be caught up by Feng Zhiling.

It would be a huge failure! It didn't even need a real fight to sentence him as lost!

That was absolutely disgraceful.

Master bai started to really feel the stress from his opponent!

This stress spirited him up!

[Feng Monarch, I will not let you catch up!]

[The gap between you and me will only go wider and wider! I will be further and further away from you!]

Ye Xiao also stressed on this. He was also spirited up!

[Although you are up in the sky!]

[Although you are in a higher position!]

[Although you are already a figure in Human Realm Upon Heavens while I am just a mortal man!]

[Although you are like god!]

[I will catch up with you! I will get you! I will defeat you! Completely!]

[I will do it no matter what cost!]

[I believe I can!]

When he was just reborn, he only wanted to go back to Qing-Yun Realm and take revenge. He wanted to conquer the Qing-Yun Realm. However, he had changed it now! Completely!

[Master Bai!]

[Bai Chen!]

[He is my destined opponent!]

Ling Wuxie, the only man who witnessed this great moment in history, was completely ignorant at the moment. He didn't know how important it was now. He was still feeling angry and unsatisfied!

"Now, time is up for me here in this mortal world. It has to be. My life here is going to end because of someone who I didn't think much of before, who is blessed by fate!"

Bai Chen smiled and said, "I am here to say goodbye to you, Brother Feng. Maybe for the next thousands of years, you and me will never meet again."

His eyes looked sharp and he said, "Or maybe you will never have

the opportunity to see me again in your life."

Ye Xiao smiled. "In my life? How about we bet on it?"

Master Bai was a bit surprised and then he laughed. "I don't think so. I only bet when I have at least eighty percent chance to win. I never lost, except being set up one time. I think I only have thirty percent chance to win if I bet with you on this. I don't think I will do it!"

Ling Wuxie thought, [Damn it. Bai Chen! Can you stop talking about it? That is long in the past. I did set you up that time. So what? You lost it to me! ... He never bet unless he has over eighty percent chance to win. No wonder he always won. That is it. I see. I should never bet with him!]

[Eighty percent! Only fools will bet with you!]

And then he sighed. [I just became a fool a few days ago...]

He remembered he and Master Bai bet in the bamboo forest, on whether Feng Monarch would give them a gift or not!

Now as things happened...

He lost it again!

...

# Chapter 628: Nine Turns Heart Dan!

---

"Heh, heh. Master Bai, you don't even believe what you just said," Ye Xiao spoke with disdainfulness, "how could you say that. That opened my eyes really!"

Master Bai was a bit embarrassed so he rubbed his nose.

What he said sounded encouraging, but he wanted to give a blow to Feng Zhiling's confidence. However, he actually showed lack of self-confidence. He didn't even dare to answer Feng Zhiling.

He was certain that Feng Monarch would go up to Human Realm Upon Heavens after all!

He was totally sure, not just seventy percent!

There was no doubt!

"Take care." Master Bai was willing to leave.

"Wait," Ye Xiao said again.

Why is it 'again'?

Because he had already said it twice earlier. This was the third time!

Master Bai clearly knew he might do so. He said, "Feng Monarch, is there anything you want to give me?"

Ye Xiao laughed. "That is why I told you to wait. Don't rush. By the way, you looked pretty awkward when you prepared to leave."

"You need to learn to be nice." Master Bai bitterly smiled as he rubbed his nose.

The worst thing about Feng Zhiling was that he would speak out everything when he noticed what others were thinking, no matter when and no matter where they were. He might even try to strike you by that, and every strike hurts!

"We have been fighting in this mortal world. Now that you are leaving and I took much of advantages of you earlier," Ye Xiao blandly spoke, "I guess I should at least make it up a bit."

Master Bai was interested. "Oh?"

"You have about twenty Heaven Seizing Supreme Dan beads ready to be used. I guess it must be more than enough. I won't give you more of that then. You have countless of treasures, so I guess any treasure from me will only be ordinary. What I can give you now is only one dan bead."

Ye Xiao took out a bottle carefully. "I spent all the ten thousand years old materials and some other strange stuffs to make two

stoves of Nine Turns Heart Dan!

"It is equally difficult as making Heaven Seizing Supreme Dan. It requires many different kinds of materials and all materials should be old enough. Other than that, it also requires much of good luck. Heaven Seizing Supreme Dan doesn't really mean anything special to me now. The success rate would be quite high as long as I get the materials right. This Nine Turns Heart Dan is the real masterpiece of mine!"

"I used all those valuable materials from Wan and Xiu as the basic materials and put in many of the great stuffs I collected these years. I also poured in some Primordial Spiritual Qi I recently got by luck. Two stoves were successful. Each stove has three dan beads. That was such a great luck to have these dan beads done. They are very likely the only Nine Turns Heart Dan I can make in my life!"

"There is one of them in this jade bottle!"

"I will only give you this one!"

Ye Xiao blandly spoke.

"Nine Turns Heart Dan!" Ling Wuxie and Master Bai were both shocked when they heard the name of it. They stood up at the same time!

"Supreme Nine Turns Heart Dan!" Ye Xiao spoke in a low voice,

"Maybe it is not as good as the ones made from materials of Human Realm Upon Heavens, but it is already the most valuable thing I made in my life."

Master Bai coughed. He seemed going to lose control.

He had thought that since Wan-Er and Xiu-Er had taken something from Feng Zhiling, he should already had his share.

He didn't want to accept more from Feng Monarch, because he didn't want to owe him too much.

However, when he saw this Nine Turns Heart Dan, he immediately changed his mind!

[That is Nine Turns Heart Dan in supreme level!]

How precious was Nine Turns Heart Dan then?

Since the beginning of the history, there had only shown up one Heaven Seizing Supreme Dan bead.

There was one dan bead that had been made in history after all!

However, Nine Turns Heart Dan in supreme level had never shown in the universe since the universe was created.

Never!

Some great dan masters spent their entire lives in Human Realm Upon Heavens and only made some normal-grade Nine Turns Heart Dan!

There was never dan clouds on it! Not even dan mist!

Those with dan glow were already supreme-grade in their eyes!

That was already a rare treasure in Human Realm Upon Heavens already! That was truly difficult to see in there. Once there was one of it shown, it would stir a disturbance in Human Realm Upon Heavens!

If Master Bai took this back to Human Realm Upon Heavens, even the four great dominators would start a big fight for it!

Nine Turns Heart Dan was dan that would act on mental state.

What was the most difficult thing to do while one was trying to break through a new stage?

Not the martial art level or any other cultivation capability, but only the upgrade of the mental state!

That was the key!

Once there was a saying, 'one thought change leads to saint'!

That meant to become saint from a mortal man only needed an upgrade of the mental state!

How important mental state was to a cultivator!

That was why Nine Turns Heart Dan was so precious!

"Thank you!" Master Bai bowed sincerely and took over the jade bottle.

At this moment, he was thrilled.

Ye Xiao took a long breath out and said, "You are welcome. From now on, as I give you this dan bead, we owe each other nothing. I took advantages from your side. I know that you knew it. You just let it be. This dan bead is what I make it up for you. I will be released if you can rise up to the supreme."

He smiled and said, "You know how important it is to feel released for me as it is for you."

Master Bai nodded slowly and said, "That is right. In my opinion, you have already made it all up without giving me this dan bead. It was already beyond my expectation. Apparently, it was not for you. What you want is to release the burden on your heart. I understand."

Ye Xiao smiled. "True. I just want to be released."

Ling Wuxie looked at the small bottle in Master Bai's hand with jealousy in eyes. His hands were moving out and back, as if he was going to grab it!

[Oh my almighty heavens... That is Nine Turns Heart Dan! In supreme level... Oh my great mother...]

[How come nobody gives me anything?]

Ling Wuxie was shouting in anger in his mind. Suddenly, he was enlightened. [Oh right. This isn't finished yet. He should say that one more time, shouldn't he? Maybe I still have the chance to get something!]

[Should I say... 'take care' like they did?]

Master Bai spoke in a deep voice, "Feng Monarch, everything comes to an end. I guess this is the end of our conversation. We will take leave now!"

Ye Xiao said, "That's right. I won't hold you for any longer. Safe trip. Take care!"

Ling Wuxie stepped forward and spoke in a strange voice, "We will leave now. TAKE CARE!"

[Hmm?]

...

# Chapter 629: You Will Have It Too!

---

Ye Xiao and Bai Chen were surprised. [What was that? This is a conversation between the two of us. We say take care and goodbye to each other, that is normal. What is wrong with you?]

However, since Ling Wuxie had said it already, Ye Xiao politely replied, "I wish you two both a safe trip. Fare well!"

And then... Ling Wuxie stood there without moving a bit or saying a word. The three of them just held there. Ling Wuxie said, "Feng Monarch, I said, TAKE CARE!"

He then looked at Ye Xiao with fever in his eyes!

[What? What is it?]

[What does he want?]

Ye Xiao and Bai Chen, two superior smart men in the world, were both shocked! They couldn't understand it!

Ling Wuxie was complaining in his mind. [Feng Monarch should be a clever man. What is wrong with him? This is such a strong hint I am giving! Why the hell doesn't he say 'wait' again!]

In fact, Ling Wuxie shouldn't be blamed. Four people in a group came to Feng Zhiling. Two girls came first and said goodbye twice,

then they got two times of 'wait', along with priceless dan beads. Master Bai also said goodbye and then Feng Zhiling said 'wait' before he gave Master Bai the Nine Turns Heart Dan.

[I have said take care to him, why hasn't he said 'wait' yet?]

[Is Feng Zhiling out of his mind? He just gave his enemy such a supreme-stage treasure? And he doesn't give me any? If he gives me some, maybe I can help him a little in the future...]

After a while, Bai Chen saw the greediness in Ling Wuxie's glowing eyes. He knew his friend's personality, so he was enlightened all of a sudden. He just didn't know how to explain it to Feng Zhiling, so he said, "I mean, Wuxie, are you waiting for the 'wait' from Feng Monarch?"

Ye Xiao was confused and then finally understood. He smiled and said, "Lord Ling is such an interesting man. I said several times of 'wait' because they just happened. I gave the two ladies Yin Yang Soul Dan because they helped me a lot. Besides, they are Master Bai's lovers, so I don't want Master Bai to worry too much about the two ladies and affect his own cultivation."

"I gave them Agerasia Dan because I promised I would. I just made it yesterday, so I gave it to them today. The dan bead I gave Master Bai is nothing. It is merely a small gift of farewell. How could a small dan bead be of any importance to Master Bai. Heh, heh..."

Ling Wuxie felt frustrated. Bai Chen moved the jade bottle which

contained the Nine Turns Heart Dan bead up and down like he was gloating. Ling felt jealous..

- Tick tick tick... -

Ling Wuxie opened his mouth while saliva came out from the corner of his mouth, dropping down to the floor. His eyes of greediness was showing that he could snatch that dan bead at any second.

Master Bai hurriedly put it in to his space rin. He knew Ling Wuxie was good at doing such things. If Ling took the dan bead, it would be quite difficult to take it back from him.

As Master Bai put away the jade bottle, he smiled and said, "Excuse me. This is what Ling Wuxie is like. He has been ignorant since he was a kid. He barely knows much and always wants the things he hasn't seen. However, he is not a bad one. He will be jealous, but won't hate or snatch it... That is his personality..."

Ling Wuxie stared at Master Bai with anger and thought, [God damn it. He actually said so, then I can't snatch it anymore.] He felt extremely desired of Master Bai's death at this very moment... He shouted, "You are ignorant, prick! Why don't you give me that Nine Turns Heart Dan if you are so good... Give it to me then... Damn it! You prick! You got what you like so you talk like you don't care... But I..."

He was venting the anger in his chest and being gloomy, "I have nothing... I just don't like it this way... It is just..." Tears nearly

came out of his eyes...

At this moment, suddenly a jade bottle showed up in front of him.

"Oh?" Ling Wuxie opened up his eyes widely looking at the jade bottle. He couldn't believe it.

Ye Xiao was smiling warmly. "Brother Feng, you gave me a treasure, so that I can escape the punishment after making the dan beads. That is such a great favor. I thought you wouldn't want my small dan beads. The only thing I am good at is making dan beads. I don't have any other things to give you, so I didn't prepare to give you anything. However, I am flattered when I just knew that you like my dan beads so much. There are two Nine Turns Heart Dan beads in the jade bottle. Please take it! Promise me don't dislike it!"

[Take it? Dislike? Two!] Ling Wuxie was stunned.

Master Bai's eyes were filled with extremely complex expressions.

[This Feng Monarch must not be any normal figure!]

[He is definitely an extremely dangerous figure!]

What surprised Bai Chen was how Feng Zhiling gave the dan beads!

Feng Zhiling and Bai Chen were destined to be enemies. Ling Wuxie was a great support on Bai Chen's side. Besides, they were like brothers to each other, so he was confident that there was nothing to shake the firm relation between them!

However, as the Nine Turns Heart Dan showed up, even Bai Chen's mind was shaken. Usually, he would have given Ling Wuxie that dan bead as Ling Wuxie wanted it so badly. However...

Ye Xiao knew there was something wrong with their relationship, and he didn't ignore it. He actually gave Ling Wuxie two of the Nine Turns Heart Dan. That was such an overwhelming strategy.

Some might think that Ye Xiao wanted to enlarge the discordance, but Bai Chen knew that in turn, Feng Zhiling was trying to solve the problem. That was marvelous.

He knew Ling Wuxie and Bai Chen were best friends that nobody could easily break their relationship, so he actually did another favor for Bai Chen...

Bai Chen thought even more highly of Feng Zhiling now!

Ling Wuxie was totally freaked out because of the dan beads he got. His face was red and he incoherently spoke, "This... That... Truly... So... I'll be damned... I... Really? For me?... Not joking? I... Me... Fxck!..."

Apparently, he didn't know what he himself was talking about either!

"I am good friend to Brother Ling. How would I make such a joke to you?" Ye Xiao was still smiling warmly and gently.

...

# Chapter 630: Keep the Regret

---

Ling Wuxie held the jade bottle tight in his hand. After he reconfirmed that they were really Nine Turns Heart Dan, he still couldn't quite believe it. His mouth and eyes were opened. He couldn't even speak a word.

That was such a surprise!

[How could I possibly know that I would have such a big gain coming to Land of Han-Yang this time!]

[I really have mine too!]

[I have two! One more than Bai Chen! Twice of his! Does it mean... Feng Monarch likes me more?]

[What a surprise!]

[Oh my god! Gods do bless nice people.]

[I was so nice to come down trying to help Bai and tell him what happened up there. Otherwise, I would never get such a great opportunity. Heavens bless kind hearts really! I am a nice man with a kind heart!]

[Ahahahahaha...]

Ling Wuxie grinned ear to ear, laughing loudly. He kept rolling the jade bottle with the dan beads in it, laughing and laughing, until he saw Master Bai's eyes, which were staring at the dan beads in his hand. He finally realized he should put it away immediately. He held it tight and said, "These are mine!"

Master Bai was embarrassed. "I won't take it from you... You good for nothing..."

"Ah, only fools believe you! Being good for nothing is much better than having nothing!" Ling Wuxie was quite happy. "I won't even let you look at these. They are mine..."

Master Bai was speechless.

...

Before they left, Master Bai stood in front of Ye Xiao and said with a sigh, "You know what, Feng Monarch, I was planning to help you become stronger. However, it turns out you are helping me. Things change. One can never predict the heaven's will!"

"There is end to the world, but there is never end to the future. The stronger you are..." Ye Xiao smiled, "the better I will feel when I defeat you!"

Bai Chen was surprised and then laughed out loud.

While he was laughing, he said, "You know what. I do have one

thing to regret in this world."

"Oh?" Ye Xiao asked.

"That is... I never saw your real face even till now." Master Bai looked at Feng Zhiling's face and said, "This is not your face."

"No." Ye Xiao smiled. "But I don't think you want to know the truth."

Bai Chen smiled. "That's right. I won't see it. I don't want to know it. Just let the puzzle stay to the future. Let's just get to it when we meet in Human Realm Upon Heavens. I want to see if I am having a correct guess!"

"Alright! Let's wait and see!" Ye Xiao blandly spoke.

Two tall and strong figures walked out the door.

Ye Xiao's voice sounded from inside, "Master Bai, please don't mind me talking too much. Before you leave this world, you need to do something for those who died in the nine thousand years!"

Master Bai stopped and solemnly spoke, "I know. I am ready to do that!"

Ye Xiao spoke in a low voice, "Merits or demerits, if you just leave, it will be a regret."

Master Bai stayed silent for a while and then he said, "That is true."

Ling Wuxie's voice sounded, "Feng Monarch, you are my friend. When you go to Human Realm Upon Heavens, I will do whatever I can to help. I may beat Bai Chen up to a pig head!"

Ye Xiao said thanks to him, but in fact he sighed in his heart.

[You are never going to stand on my side if the fight between me and him begins.]

[Never.]

The two men were apparently gone.

The speaking voice came from distance, "The tunnel will be blocked after half a year! Feng Monarch, are you ready?"

That was exactly Master Bai.

The first moment he was so close, yet the next moment, he was already gone off sight. He had recovered to his true cultivation. That was much powerful than what Ye Xiao could understand.

However, Ye Xiao knew he would be unbelievably powerful. It was the words from Master Bai which

shocked him. [Half year? That soon.]

...

Back to the bamboo forest, Ling Wuxie started to make trouble.

"Give me half of your Heaven Seizing Supreme Dan beads!"

"Piss off! Why don't you give me one of your Nine Turns Heart Dan beads?"

"Get away! Fine. Can't you just give me two of the Yin Yang Should Dan beads?"

"I won't give you a damn thing!"

"Fine! Watch and see! Humph..."

"Humph your fat ass! A deal is a deal. That shop in Human Realm Upon Heavens is mine now!"

"You are a monster Bai Chen! Ahhhhh..."

Then they fought and fought, rolling on the floor...

- Puff! Puff! Puff! -

"Give it to me!"

- Puff! Puff! Puff! -

"No way! Give yours to me!"

"I won't give in... I won't give you anything! I mean it..."

...

At the same day.

In the north battle.

Ye Nantian finally got the fine weather he wanted so badly.

The Grassland Wolf also had the good day to go on their plan.

"Humph! If not the rainstorms earlier, the south troops without the lead of Ye Nantian would be defeated thoroughly long ago. Those southerners are truly lucky! However, today is the day their good luck ends! Without Ye Nantian, they are nothing!"

"That's right! As reported, Ye Nantian should still be in Chen-Xing City. All assassins in the world gathered in the capital of

Kingdom of Chen earlier. Their city is in a chaos. Their stupid king is terribly in trouble. He needs Ye Nantian's support there to maintain the peace in the city."

"I heard their Second Prince's family is wiped? Their Crown Prince committed treason? Their king lost two sons. He must be seriously sick at the moment. He won't let Ye Nantian leave. Hahahaha... God bless me! The southerners are stupid. There are actually people among them who chose to commit treason at this time... Isn't it a great help to us?"

"That's right! Wolf King, please give the order! Let's march out and enter the north! Kill their Northern Army and go straight to the south! As long as we break their forces now, even Ye Nantian couldn't do anything when he returns. What a great opportunity!"

"That's right! Give us the order, my Wolf King! As long as we entered the boundary, we can capture many of their women and kill many of their men... We will rule this world!"

"Right! The gold mountains of Kingdom of Chen are waiting. I can't wait..."

"Since so, let's march at midnight tonight! Let's crash them!"

"AHH! AHH! AHH!"

Cheering filled the tents in the grassland.

...

# Chapter 631: Marching in the Grassland!

---

At the same time.

In Ye Nantian's secret tent.

"We have shown weakness to them to an extreme extent. I believe they will make their final attack soon. When the fight begins, we should pretend defenseless, so that they will get in! We will sweep them all at once! Once and for all!"

"Yes, Commander!"

"Gunpowder?"

"Ready!"

"Bow and arrow?"

"One hundred thousand archers in ten groups all stand by! Three quivers for each archer. Thirty arrows in each quiver! Everything were checked and confirmed for three times!"

"So we have nine million arrows in total?"

"We do, Commander!"

"Hmm. We can reuse some of them too. That's good. Arrowhead?"

"Half of them are envenomed. We are working on the rest. Enemies are coming at any second. I don't think we can make it. I didn't finish my mission, so please, I will bear the punishment."

"What punishment? To finish half in such a short time. That is marvelous. Half of the nine million arrows. That is enough... Fire?"

"Ready!"

"Where is my cavalry?"

"Commander, they have finished preparing. What they need is the order from you before they rush into the grassland!"

"Battle pit? Long-handled hook? Heel rope?"

"All set!"

"Rolling Stones on the mountains both sides?"

"All ready! I shall chop off my own head if anything goes wrong here!"

"Your head means nothing to me! I want everything ready!"

"Yes. All set!"

"Good!"

Ye Nantian stood up. He was so tall that he was like a sharp sword pointing up to the heavens. In his eyes, there was only gold killing qi. "Three day! We are in superior war preparedness! I think the attack from the grassland people will come tonight or tomorrow night... No matter what, as the fight begins, all I want is... that no more Grassland Wolves in the world!"

"All troops stand by! Three horses for every one of you. Two hundred thousand cavalrymen will be our vanguard. Seven hundred thousand soldiers will march in the grassland following the vanguard!"

"We will sweep the north to the end of the wasteland!"

"Yes, Commander!"

"No prisoners wanted this time! Women or men, elderly or children, we kill them all!"

"Yes, Commander!"

All the men in the tent stood up. They were thrilled and their

eyes were filled with fever!

Grassland Wolf army had been a great danger for all kingdoms in the Land of Han-Yang. For so many years, they kept harassing the kingdoms at the borderland... They had even killed their way into the center of the land...

Wherever they went there was blood and flesh!

It was not simply a war between the kingdoms and the grassland men. That was ethnical enmity!

Enmity that would lead one to wipe out another!

Only when one side was extinct could it be ended!

Ye Nantian had planned this extinction fight for a long time before this!

In his heart, there would never be any grassland tribes in the world after this fight. The danger could be wiped out once and for all!

[That is when I finish what I promised to you!]

[My future will always be in Qing-Yun Realm!]

...

At the night.

It was purely dark in the sky because of the clouds. Wild wind was blowing!

The grassland was like an ocean in the dark rainstorm, rolling up and down...

In the waves of the grassland, a dark colored grassland troop was running like a group of ghosts!

More and more men on horses showed up after them. It became a huge army running along like seismic sea wave!

A sound of countless men shouting sounded all of a sudden.

"KILL THEM ALL!"

Waves rolled like tides, rushing over to the camp of Ye Nantian's Northern Army!

The fierceness and cruelty were in their nature. It made people scared even with a single glance.

At this moment, the Wolf King, who was in the second group of

the marching forces, was actually making his speech on the horse. "This is the opportunity given by heavens! Our horses are stepping on the this land. Let me try to make a poem like those southerners!"

He thought and then suddenly pointed his horse whip forward, shouting, "Splash-ink in the sky while fierce wind blows; million waves marching to the middle land! Mountains and rivers come true from dreams; enmity from ancient days ends tonight!"

"Brilliant Wolf King!"

"Bravo! Great poem!"

"Hahahaha... Brothers! Come with me!"

"Kill them all!"

"Kill! Kill! Kill!"

"Ahhhh...."

...

The iron riders from grassland rushed into the camp of the Northern Army overwhelmingly. Everywhere was in chaos. Moaning, fighting, roaring, shouting, and all different sounds sounded.

It seemed the world fell into noise of chaos.

At the same time, fires were everywhere!

Almost half of the tents within a hundred miles were crashed in a short time!

"Grassland people are coming! Guys, we should retreat for now! Retreat!"

Someone loudly shouted, "Retreat! Retreat..."

After a short time of defense, everyone in the Northern Army was like having more feet to run. They suddenly ran so fast to all sides, spreading out. They looked just like running away from a hunt...

They were running for their lives...

Countless of the soldiers didn't even fight. They just kept running away.

Smoke rushed up to the sky, like it was going to cover all the glows from the sky. However, it was blown away by the wild wind immediately.

However, the grassland people had lost more people in this fight.

so far, at least thousands of them!

"Northern Army without Ye Nantian is no more the invincible army anymore! Completely cannot withstand a single blow! Go get them! Guys! Let's go on the victory rush! We are going to rule the middle land!"

"Wolf King! Wait! Will this be a trap... We have been fighting against the Northern Ary for so many years. Since when they have become so easy to defeat? I am afraid this is their plan!"

"Hahaha... You fear Ye Nantian too much! You have lost your guts! If Ye Nantian is leading those men, I won't be so rushing... But... Look how they flee! They are no more an army! Just a bunch of running dogs!"

"Look at the dust behind them. Look at that mess. You know how to rule soldiers. You know the battle too. I guess you know what elite troops look like, right? While the elite troops run, the dust rush up in tidiness! Look at them now..."

"If they truly set up a trap in that... then I must call it the strangest thing in the world..."

...

# Chapter 632: Lethal Ambush!

---

"Wolf King, we still need to be cautious. What if..."

"Get away! You can take your men and get out of here, coward! Don't waste my time here! When I take the middle land, you will not get your share! You will get nothing! Get away!"

Wolf King shouted and laughed. He and his best troops rushed over like tides.

Hundreds of thousand men were all shouting and moving like a whirlwind...

The man who stopped the Wolf King halted for a while. He watched their grassland people rushing forward, entering into an undefended flat land. At that moment, he finally couldn't bear just looking. He shouted, "We are going too! Let's go! Hurry up..."

"Ohhh..."

The last grassland troop was also shouting and rushing into the camp of the Northern Army. After that, they all got out from the camp from the other side, rushing up to the main force, shouting and crashing everything on their way...

[Glories! Wealth! Mountains! Rivers! Beauties... We are coming!]

...

Ye Nantian, who had planned all this, was standing on top of a mountain.

He gazed at the battle coldly.

He watched his men crashing like a collapsing mountain, fleeing to where they should lead the enemy to!

As the losing Northern Army just crossed the line, sound of the horse steps thundered up!

It sounded like drums beating with rhythm!

"The iron riders of Grassland Wolf are invincible in the world!" Ye Nantian sighed. "Those men grew up on the back of the horses... They are born to fight on the horses. That is... shocking! No wonder the kingdoms are never ever able to conquer them, even when the kingdoms were in their prime age!"

"However, this time, it is done. No matter how invincible they are, they will fall here! After this, Northern Army will be the only army who dares to claim inviolability!"

The grassland troops' flags were flying in the wind in front. They rushed into the canyon, almost catching up with the losing Northern Army. They were shouting, raging, and swaying their weapons.

Behind the flags, there were countless men riding on their horses running into the canyon fiercely...

"The grassland folks are truly... reckless and foolhardy... Such an obvious ambush, they actually never doubted at all. They just ran into it..." A general beside Ye Nantian sighed.

"If they are smart as the guys in our court, they would have ruled the entire land for a long time already," another general coldly spoke.

"Maybe not." Ye Nantian smiled. He lightly smiled. "Things always have both sides. If they are really that smart... they may not be able to grow into such a threat to us like now."

The generals around Ye Nantian felt like laughing when they heard him.

He seemed talking about the grassland folks, but in fact he was sneering at those officials in the court. That was a cruel sarcasm indeed!

The grassland folks rushed like wild wind. Two hours had passed, yet they still couldn't catch up with the Northern Army. They could see them in their sight, but never really able to catch them!

They were like a flood trying to get those men, but could never

really do...

"Now, three fourth of them have crossed the line. It is almost time! As time passes, I am afraid we can no longer be able to lock the way out in time. If there is a hole there, we will need more work to fix it..." Ye Nantian's eyes turned cold. "Do it now! Detonate!"

"Yes, Commander!"

A loud clarion resounded around the mountains. It shocked everybody's heart, as well as the war!

- Dudu! Dudu... -

Clarion resounded from all the mountains all of a sudden.

The rushing grassland folks were frightened. Their hearts were all shaken!

[Amb... Ambush?]

[No...]

[How come? This should be an easy fight!]

The next moment, what happened crushed their hope for luck!

Within seconds, detonation resounded from everywhere in the hundreds mile canyon!

It exploded!

That was a loud explosion. The entire land was even quivering because of it. It exploded everywhere... The horses of the grassland folks were panicking at the same time. Many horses were exploded into parts, and a lot of them wildly ran away. The grassland troops were not so tidily marching anymore. Eighty percent of the riders were damaged by the explosion!

It suddenly looked like the end of the world.

Whatever could be seen was men and horses being exploded into small parts...

The detonation was still going on. Horses were running away in panic, and some soldiers were stepped on by the horses and died...

After a while, another loud and terrifying sound reverberated.

Ye Nantian's men set rolling rocks, and now, they were all rolling down to the canyon. They smashed those who didn't die from explosion or stampede!

The land shook, as well as the mountains...

Lots of huge rocks started to roll down to the grassland folks because of the shake...

A thundering noise sounded. The cliff on the east side totally fell down! The explosion shook the mountain so badly that it led to a landslide!

That was such an enormous falling mountain!

Endless huge rocks fell down! It felt like the sky was collapsing, like a huge cloth was covering the entire land!

Tens of thousands of the grassland folks were smashed. Moans and scream echoed everywhere.

The grassland troops were divided into two parts by the falling mountain!

...

# Chapter 633: Settle the North

---

The detonation gradually subsided, but the canyon was still shaking, and the rocks were still falling down from the top of the mountains on the two sides of the hundreds mile long canyon. Some of them were pushed down, while the others were simply shaken off...

In fact, many soldiers fell off the mountain along with the rocks because they were careless when pushing them...

There were people rolling and lying down in the valley. The grassland folks all looked in despair...

That was a good plan. One after another layer of traps, striking again and again. They didn't have any chance to escape at all.

It was their rattrap!

The one hundred mile long canyon had become full of blood and flesh. Dead bodies with blood were piled on the floor layer after layer!

"Make it faster! Push off all the rocks in seven minutes!" Ye Nantian shouted loudly. His voice shook the one hundred mile land!

- Boom... -

"Set the fire!"

In fact, he didn't need to speak at all.

The canyon had already been covered by flames. Flames rose up everywhere, making it a splendid colorful valley.

The explosion had lit up all those fuel materials!

To lit up more was simply adding fuel to the fire.

However, that was a huge amount of fuel though! Endless dried firewoods were thrown down to the flame.

The fire were connected in the valley...

Smoke was rising up to the clouds.

Many grassland people were lit on fire already. They were moaning, running, rolling on the floor, trying to put the fire off...

However, as they rolled on the floor, there would be people or horses stepping over them...

The place was such a mess. Everybody was panicking. They ran without directions, with eyes filled with desperation.

"Archers ready!"

"Loose!"

"Do not spare any men down there!"

Hundreds of thousand archers showed up on both side of the canyon. Arrow fell down like a rainstorm, falling to the crowd crazily...

The poisonous arrows were shooting rapidly. Fire and poison worked together to sweep all living beings!

"Reserve team ready! Come with me!"

Ye Nantian rushed out with his sword, shouting, "Kill!"

He then rushed off the mountaintop, riding over the collapsing mountain to the entrance of the valley. He swayed his long sword in the crowd which was the lucky one fourth of the grassland troops that were still outside the line. Hundreds of them fell down with blood splashing away under his sword attack!

The grassland troops in the valley would definitely die. He didn't need to mind them at all. They had been killing each other and thirty percent were dead. Flames, bombs, and arrows were getting on them again and again. Inside the valley, it was like a hell!

Nobody could survive!

Ye Nantian crashed against the troops outside the valley!

He was like a tiger running into a bunch of sheep...

Hmm. No. It should be a huge tiger rushing into a bunch of rabbits!

Sheep would defend themselves with their horns, but rabbits only waited to be killed!

Ye Nantian was invincible at the moment. Wherever he passes, the grassland people all died!

"Ye Nantian!"

"Oh lord! He is Ye Nantian!"

"No wonder they could set up such an ambush... Ye Nantian was in command!"

"Heavens want us die!"

"We are done. We are done now. This godlike killer is leading them!"

"We must run..."

Ye Nantian's name could arouse the deepest fear in the hearts of the grassland folks!

In this grassland, Northern Army or Grassland Wolf, nobody dared to violate Ye Nantian. Nobody dared to say that he could defeat Ye Nantian!

That was the prestige of the military god, Ye Nantian of the Kingdom of Chen!

He only showed himself, and the grassland folks were shocked badly already. They had lost will to fight. They could only flee and run for lives!

At this moment, they were stepping on each other.

Ye Nantian caught up with them. His long sword was shining splendid lights. That was a one way massacre...

One man was chasing and killing hundreds of thousand people in this one direction route...

He must be the only one in the history to do this!

He was unique!

After him, the horse steps sounded loudly. The cavalry that had been hiding for a long time showed up and rushed over like tides.

It was done!

It took them three full days to finish this fight!

Million grassland troops all died in this unnamed canyon!

After this battle, this unnamed canyon was named Extinction Canyon!

After this fight, the grassland tribes were all vanished in this place. They were only names in the history books!

Northern Army didn't leave soon. Seven hundred thousand men searched the area again and again until they were sure no grassland people survived. All dead bodies were piled up separately.

As Ye Nantian gave the order, the dead bodies were all lit up in fire!

The army made a rally to pledge resolution before rushing into the grassland!

This was the fight that Ye Nantian would feel most guilty for his life. It was also the most cruel and bloody battle in the history of

Land of Han-Yang!

The massacre began when Ye Nantian's army marched to the grassland!

The young men in the grassland were all slaughtered within three months.

There was barely anybody in the grassland who survived, except a few really old people!

This was the 'Hundred Massacre Days' in history!

Ye Nantian settled the north with an extremely brutal fight!

He also got some infamy because of this. Butcher! Slayer! Inhuman...

After that, there was only civil war in the Land of Han-Yang. No invasion afterwards! There had never been any massacre and brutal outlanders.

How to judge Ye Nantian?

After this battle, Ye Nantian got to know that the Wolf King had made a poem once. He felt funny and he laughed.

"Splash-ink in the sky while fierce wind blows; million waves marching to the middle land! Mountains and rivers come true from dreams; enmity from ancient days ends tonight! Ha... I never knew this old man was actually good at this..." Ye Nantian read it and smiled. "Splash-ink in the sky while fierce wind blows; million wolves marching to the middle land! Victory brings peace to the kingdom; enmity from ancient days ends tonight! ... Hmm. The last line is not bad. That tells the truth!"

...

# Chapter 634: World Memorial Ceremony (1)

---

...

The next day after Ye Nantian started the massacre.

The sky over Chen-Xing City, capital of the Kingdom of Chen, showed a strange phenomenon.

That was a sunny day with clear sky!

The sky was blue and the air temperature was pleasing. Everybody felt good.

The wind blew on their faces and they breath in the air. Everything made them feel comfortable.

Many old people breathed the air greedily and sighed. [This is the best day I ever have in Chen-Xing City!]

They even felt less painful on their worn-out bodies...

At this day, the depression that had been in the sky for a long time and the bloody smell of killings were all gone...

That was such a peaceful day! Full of happiness and quietness!

While the sun was rising up in the sky, suddenly, one rainbow after another showed up around the sun.

There was no rain. How come there was a rainbow'?

People looked to the sky.

It wasn't illusion. Rainbows showed up in the sky.

Suddenly, a lightning struck in the sky!

- Crack! - It was like making a crack in the sky!

There was even no clouds in the sky, only rainbows. How could there be lightnings?

Everybody was shocked!

However, everybody realized something serious was going to happen next...

They all looked at the rainbow up in the sky!

Ye Xiao walked out his room while holding Bing-Er, then looked at the sky, lost in thoughts.

Even the king, who was almost broken down, slowly walked out

his bedroom looking at the sky, frowning without saying a word.

He didn't know what was going to happen next.

More and more rainbows showed up. After a while, they slowly gathered together in the sky...

As they moved and moved...

It seemed the rainbows were gathering into a sign?

Everybody noticed there was a huge sign showing up in the sky.

They stared at the sky, not willing to miss any detail.

Apparently, they all realized that... this might be their only chance to see such a scene in the sky.

That was a rare opportunity, so how could they miss it.

As more and more rainbows gathered together, it formed something like stairs in the sky...

It was going up and up.

The rainbows on top gathered together too, making new structures upstairs...

Step by step...

They all realized what it was going to be...

"Oh! That... looks like an..." somebody shouted.

"That's right... It looks like an... altar?"

"Alright... Now that is going to be desk for fiesta... What is going on?"

"That's a rainbow altar? That... is our god... going to do something in memory of somebody?"

"That's not true... Whywould gods put an altar here, no matter who they are holding this for!"

"That's true..."

"That is obviously something beyond human capability..."

"Well it is. Even the king, even the best martial artist in Sky Origin Stage, even the legendary Feng Monarch of Ling-Bao Hall couldn't do that..."

"This is so weird... So weird..."

"Hmm... fathomless..."

"Hush! Cut the crap! The god will hear you..."

"That's right. Don't talk. We must not disturb the gods. We will regret for the rest of our lives if we miss this chance..."

...

Under people's watch, an altar actually formed with rainbows in the sky.

It was surrounded by mist. The rainbows formed into three sticks of incense too which burned on the desk.

The rainbows suddenly gathered faster.

Finally, there showed up three words.

‘World Memorial Ceremony’!

The words just showed up in the sky all of a sudden. It struck on everybody's heart. Everybody was shocked.

[So it is an altar!]

The rainbows were still moving over from all sides. One after another, more and more words were formed in the sky beyond the altar.

‘All lands bow;’

‘All seas kowtow.’

‘Control the rise and fall with one hand;’

‘House of the Chaotic Storms!’

These were the words that first showed up.

The last line explained a lot to everybody.

"House of the Chaotic Storms! This is House of the Chaotic Storms!" It sounded extremely startling.

The king was reading the words slowly. "House of the Chaotic Storms... What is Master Bai trying to do here with all this magic?"

"What is House of the Chaotic Storms trying to do making such a huge scene?"

"This... Hmm... This is unfathomable..."

Two straight lines of words showed up one by one on the sides of the altar as the rainbows moved!

One word showed up after another.

Those were like elegiac couplets.

On the left, it said, ‘How many heroic figures died in the nine thousand years of chaos!'

On the right, it said, ‘How many countries collapsed during the three hundred times of decay!'

The words showed up one by one in the sky. It nearly covered the entire sky. The entire Land of Han-Yang seemed to be so solemn and filled with sorrow.

Countless people were standing on the ground looking up at the sky like they were fixed on the floor.

They all felt like sighing.

Nine thousand years of chaos was exactly what the House of the Chaotic Storms brought to the world. No matter how powerful and strong the ruling kingdom was in the world, as long as House of the Chaotic Storms showed up, it would become weak and fragile.

Another force would take place of it!

The shifts required so many battles, killings, blood and flesh. Countless heroic men died in the battles because of that.

The kingdoms shifted one after another. It only took House of the Chaotic Storms one snap of the finger!

There was no exception ever!

All those kingdoms, big or small, all vanished in the history and became names on the history books.

...

# Chapter 635: World Memorial Ceremony (2)

---

Three kingdoms collapsed!

That was what the House of the Chaotic Storms had done in history!

How many people died?

How many families were torn apart?

How many dreams were broken?

That was impossible to count, just like sands of Ganges River!

Now, the House of the Chaotic Storms set the altar up in the sky with fanfare.

This World Memorial Ceremony shocked the entire world!

Was it held for the people who died?

Those people who died because of the House of the Chaotic Storms!

People all stayed quiet and calm, waiting for what was going to happen next!

Suddenly, a sound of drum beat sounded and broke the silence the world!

- Drum! -

That sound came from the sky. However, people all felt like it was resounding in their hearts!

Their hearts were shaking along with it!

They kept shaking!

- Drum, drum, drum... -

The drum beats kept sounding.

The rainbows in the sky started to fall down one after another, like a stairway.

It was exactly the size for one person to step on.

When the last stair was done, the drum stopped.

It had sounded ninety-nine times in total!

And there were ninety-nine stairs of the stairway in total.

The ninety-nine stairs led to the World Memorial Ceremony altar!

The world was turned into silence again!

Everything was waiting!

However, was there really anybody who could step on the stairs and walk to the altar?

That was beyond human capability!

Only gods or ghosts could do that!

While everybody was looking at the sky, three figures started to rise up to the sky all of a sudden.

All were dressed in white like snow!

They showed up in the sky all of a sudden!

Among them there was a young man wearing white. His face was like jade, and his hair was dark.

On the two sides of this handsome young man, there were two

pretty and exquisite ladies!

Even the most ignorant people knew who they were the moment when they showed up!

Everybody, no matter how unenlightened, could recognize them after the three of them showed up after the words 'House of the Chaotic Storms'.

Master Bai!

The young man was the mysterious Master Bai, who was known as the true owner of House of the Chaotic Storms. He had controlled the rise and fall of the world for nine thousand years. However, nobody had ever seen his true face!

Now, he finally showed himself!

The ladies were absolutely Wan of the Clouds and Xiu of the Heavens!

'On the left stood Wan of the Clouds;'

'On the right stood Xiu of the Heavens.'

'With a wave of his hand, he could summon winds and clouds;'

‘By extending his arms, he could even grasp the universe!’

Everybody knew it in the Land of Han-Yang!

This moment, they finally saw their faces.

They were shocked and stunned.

They couldn’t believe these three figures would show up like this!

Many of them believed that they were old scary monsters with long white hairs and rickety bodies...

Stories about them were from nine thousand years earlier after all!

Who could imagine that they were still so young and energetic?

The three figures walked up to the sky step by step on the stairway. Everybody was watching them.

The wind blew.

Their white clothes were flying, as well as their hair. They looked so elegant.

They were solemn, looking straight forward.

Step by step, their strong vigor made everybody silent!

That was a long stairway, but it ended.

Master Baii stood in the middle. He raised his head a bit and looked at the altar, which was like the altar in a myth. He sighed and waved his hand. Three rainbows fell on his hand.

They became three burning incense sticks.

"To be witnessed by the sun and the moon, on the altar formed between sky and earth, with the incense made from rainbows, I here hold this memorial ceremony for the deaths!" Master Bai spoke loudly, "Many times, the House of the Chaotic Storm watched those lives fading away. We might not mean to do that, but we are to be blamed."

"Today, as requested by destiny, with the name of the world conqueror, I hereby commemorate the faded lives, and release our souls from purgatory. It is not enough, but I shall do what I can to show my sincerity to make it up for the deaths."

As he spoke, he bowed slightly with the incense sticks in his hands.

Wan-Er and Xiu-Er bowed after him too.

"First, to the kingdoms, their kings and officials, which collapsed because of me, I wish them happy and peaceful afterlives..."

"Second, to those who fought and died for me, I wish them happy and peaceful afterlives!"

"Third, to the innocent citizens who died because of me, I wish them happy and peaceful afterlives!"

"Fourth, for the living beings that died because of me..."

"Fifth, ..."

"..."

His voice was loud and clear.

It wasn't blaring, but it was loud enough for everyone to hear it clearly.

From many places in the world, some dark smoke started to roll up and fade away in the air.

Those were the grievances that hadn't been cleared up for all those years. They were finally released.

Endless resentful souls were finally released and went to

transmigration!

As Master Bai's ceremony went on, more and more dark smoke showed up and then disappeared.

People in the world all watched the shocking scene.

While Master Bai said 'I wish them happy and peaceful afterlives', it was more like an order than a wish!

In fact, he was giving orders!

[Whoever died because of me, no matter what, should be released to the transmigration of their next life!]

[Who on earth dares to stop them?]

Nobody dared to!

The world was in silence!

Only his voice was resounding in the sky again and again.

Even the wind didn't make a sound, like it didn't dare to interrupt Master Bai's talking.

"Chaotic storm for nine thousand years. How many kingdoms

rise and fall. Thousands of wars. Billion people in misery..." Master Bai sounded heavy-hearted. "Here, I shall apologize to the world. I apologize."

"From now on, there will be no more House of the Chaotic Storm!"

"Wan of the Clouds, Xiu of the Heavens, they will disappear in this world forever!"

"Now I will leave and never return!"

"Here I hold the World Memorial Ceremony!"

"I bow to the glorious souls!"

"I wish you all wealthy and peaceful afterlives!"

"Gods and spirits in the world shall follow my command!"

"The dark hell underground should be under my lead!"

"Open the gate for all these souls; there shall not be delays!"

"Requested by destiny, for the name of the world conqueror!"

"Who violates should be doomed eternally!"

...

# Chapter 636: World Memorial Ceremony (3)

---

After Master Bai finished his speech, huge masses of dark smoke rolled up from everywhere in the world. There had been a few masses of dark smokes everywhere, but now it was like dark clouds covering the sky!

Darkness covered the lights from the sky!

The entire land was covered by dark clouds!

When the dark smoke rose up about ten meters high, it suddenly boosted up to the sky. The wild wind from east to west blew it away immediately!

Master Bai stood in the sky with his flying clothes and a solemn face.

As he finished speaking, the World Memorial Ceremony had come to the end!

The world was still in silence!

Everyone could clearly feel the souls with resentment showed up and then disappeared.

It was a relief.

It was a release!

What happened was like god's marvelous work!

The House of the Chaotic Storm left the world. It was a good news to all kings in the Land of Han-Yang. At the same time, it was also their relief. It was like the sword on their necks were suddenly gone.

Master Bai looked around, smiling all along.

At the moment, a brilliant sword rose up to the sky from inside the royal house of the Kingdom of Chen. It shot to Master Bai.

On the sword, there was a piece of white cloth.

Master Bai waved his hand and the sword fell to his hand.

He unfolded the cloth and then smiled. It was not the same smile now. It wasn't the solemn and serious smile, but a casual smile!

'The stranded souls are blessed and released in the World Memorial Ceremony you are holding. You admitted your mistake. How impressive and admirable. However, to err is human. You are right to admit your faults, but what about your achievements?'

'During the years when the House of the Chaotic Storms ruled, all kings lived in fear. They feared they would be replaced someday

by someone else. That is why all kings in nine thousand years are barely tyrannous. They all worked hard on ruling the kingdom and loved their own people. On one hand, they strengthened themselves so that the kingdom would solve the problems there might be in the future, and on the other, they wouldn't want to be replaced by the House of the Chaotic Storms with some other king.'

'The deterrence made all the kings in the Land of Han-Yang good kings in nine thousand years! People in the world enjoyed the peaceful world for over eight thousand years. What you did for it cannot be forgotten.'

'I think this memorial ceremony is not necessary. It surely may relieve you from your own guilt, however, the kings to come in the future will be beyond restraints. If people suffer because of it, isn't it a sorrowful thing?'

'Nine thousand years with you and the House of the Chaotic Storms, and there are only dozens of years in misery. If there weren't you around, would any kingdom be eternal? Absolutely not!'

'Human beings are greedy. They long for the glory of being king. That is unchangeable.'

'Now that you are leaving, I don't have anything proper to give as a gift. These words are my sincere wish for you. Hope your future is full of glorious light in Human Realm Upon Heavens!'

No signature on it.

However, it was obviously Chen Xuantian, king of Kingdom of Chen!

Master Bai turned around and looked at the royal house of the Kingdom of Chen. He smiled and spoke blandly, "Very kind of you."

He then waved his hand and the sword suddenly shined in golden lights. It became like a different sword, full of monarchical lights.

And then he pointed on the sword and blandly said, "It is kind of you to try to relieve me from guilt. I shall give you a sword as a gift! This sword is named Holy Providence. It can help you protect your kingdom. I wonder whether you can hold it stably!"

As he finished talking, the sword emitted enormous lights, flying up to the sky, lighting up the entire firmament.

Two words showed up in the white lights.

'Holy Providence'!

After that, the white lights followed the sword, flying fast to the royal house of the Kingdom of Chen like a shooting star.

After the the king asked Master Sun to throw that sword out, he

sighed and stopped watching the altar in the sky.

At the moment, he was frowning while lost in thoughts. The words written on the cloth was words from his heart. The House of the Chaotic Storms had planned to collapse Kingdom of Chen, so it was definitely Kingdom of Chen's enemy.

However, the king might be hostile to it, but he didn't hate it. The House of the Chaotic Storms and Master Bai collapsed many kingdoms. They chose their targets for certain reasons. What they did, in a further perspective, was positive for the development of the world. No wise kings would hate it.

The House of the Chaotic Storms told the world they were leaving. Like what Chen Xuantian wrote on the cloth, the kings would be released from the restraint, as House of the Chaotic Storms left in such a resounding way.

Once the constraining force was gone, the kings would become egoistic. Nobody knew what that would lead to in the future.

Chen Xuantian, as a king of a big kingdom, knew exactly what was going on.

That was why he was so worried. He couldn't calm down.

At this moment, white lights lit up the sky and a stream of bright light shot over to him.

Under countless people's watch, it shot into the King's study room!

It was where he stayed right now!

That sword was so overwhelming that it might ruin half of the royal house at once, not to mention the study room!

However, as the white light entered the study room, it turned into silence, like an ox made of clay sinking in the sea.

The king was stunned. He hurriedly entered the inner room and found that the sword was back on the wall!

It was the King's private sword that he used in the battles he attended long ago. It was hung on the wall for a long time.

Master Bai was so far away, yet he could actually throw it back to where it had been accurately. The sword was even back to the scabbard.

How amazing!

In fact, the truly amazing thing happened after this!

The King grabbed the sword and drew the sword out! - Clang! -

The sword was half out of the scabbard, yet it already emitted cold glows. Suddenly, the entire room was filled with the aura of the universe!

...

# Chapter 637: Farewell!

---

The king stared at the sword he had been using in the old days. It was definitely the same sword, yet it was so strange to him!

It was modified by Master Bai!

The sword had been in Master Bai's hand for just a while, yet it was completely changed! It was much more elegant than before!

The sign of its old name had vanished, replaced by the two words.

‘Holy Providence’!

The ying quivered when he saw the two words!

[Is this his gift to me? As a response to my sincere words?]

[Holy Providence!]

[That means... before he leaves, he admits my royal position!]

[He admits to my fate!]

“This sword, from now on, is our Representative Sword of the Kingdom! Representative Sword of the Land! Representative

Sword of the Fate! Only the peerless king of the entire world can hold this sword! In other words, whoever holds this sword, holds the world!"

The king took in a deep breath.

He was still quivering.

He didn't expect to have such a precious return when he decided to say something deep from the bottom of his heart!

Feng Monarch had extended his life and now Master Bai gave him the sword, Holy Providence!

He gained the recognition of two of the most powerful men in the world!

Did it mean he was the only true king in this world?

At the same time, Master Bai's voice resounded in the sky.

"The sword, Holy Providence, holds the fate of the world. Whoever gets it, gets it all!"

The entire Land of Han-Yang could hear him clearly!

And then he rolled his eyes and spoke in a low voice, "Feng

Monarch, I'll wait for you!"

In the House of Ye, Ye Xiao was staring at Master Bai, who was standing on the rainbows. His eyes were filled with complex expressions. He thought, [Don't worry. I won't let you wait too long!]

It was like they could do mind communication. As Ye Xiao just finished thinking, Master Bai laughed and said, "Now! Let the chaotic storms strike in Human Realm Upon Heavens!"

As he shouted, he jumped up of the rainbows and then flied up like a long dragon rising in the sky!

As he rose up, the altar and stairway exploded and became endless rainbows again that wrapped his body. Wan of the Clouds and Xiu of the Heavens were on both sides of him. Their clothes were floating, as well as their hairs.

"I am coming!"

A cyan color figure flew up from the ground like lightning. The next moment, he was already shoulder to shoulder with Master Bai. They were rushing up to the firmament.

Everyone down in the earth was looking at them silently. They even tried not to blink, as they didn't want to miss any detail of this.

They all knew that this was the most memorable thing they would see in their lives. Any tiny detail they missed now would lead to their lifelong regret for sure!

Suddenly, Master Bai loudly spoke, "One hand tears open the path in the firmament, while the other holds the sword with freedom. Reunion in Human Realm Upon Heavens, and rebuild the House of the Chaotic Storms!"

He then reached his both hands slowly and split something to two sides.

At this moment, his both hands showed up with colorful and splendid rainbow lights!

- Crack! -

It was like a glass bottle breaking into pieces, making a clear sound!

A strange fissure suddenly showed up in the sky. It seemed like he split the sky and made a fissure! Space was not something that could be split, yet it was like a paper in his hands! He just teared it from the middle!

In that fissure, there was boundless void with endless stars of the firmament.

Master Bai didn't hesitate. He walked into the light of the stars,

and the other three also entered after him.

The four of them entered the fissure and then the fissure started to close slowly.

They didn't move fast, but they didn't look back either. It seemed Land of Han-Yang, where they had left countless legendary stories, didn't really mean that much to them!

As the space went back to normal, Master Bai disappeared with that fissure. He was never seen again.

At this moment.

The House of the Chaotic Storms, who controlled all kingdoms' rise and fall, finally disappeared in the Land of Han-Yang.

Master Bai never returned to Land of Han-Yang in his life!

However, the stories about Master Bai, Wan of the Clouds and Xiu of the Heavens, became more and more dramatic, and finally became a myth!

The Myth of Han-Yang!

'Even if there was a man who occupied the highest position in the whole world, he wouldn't be a match to the world's No. 1 cultivator in white!'

This was known by the entire world!

That's right. Even though you are in the highest position in the world, you can never be a match to Master Bai!

Because he could sweep everything you have if he wants, instantly!

If he wants, he could change history!

‘On the left stood Wan of the Clouds; on the right stood Xiu of the Heavens. With a wave of his hand, he could summon winds and cloud; by extending his arms, he could even grasp the universe!’

How vigorous!

How stylish!

How peerless!

How was this not a myth!

Especially... the scene that Master Bai showed up in the sky with Wan of the Clouds and Xiu of the Heavens, it was so beautiful. His vigor and elegance could never be found again in the mortal world! They were beauties that could never be found in the world!

That was Master Bai!

Those were Wan of the Clouds and Xiu of the Heavens!

They only existed upon the clouds, in the heavens!

‘It received complete respect from all countries. The seas bowed deeply, showing utter reverence. In front of them, empires were but mere child’s play. This, is the House of the Chaotic Storm!’

It was an eternal legend, the ultimate myth.

It was irreplaceable!

It was unforgettable!

The only thing that people were still confused about was the last words Master Bai said before he left. ‘Feng Monarch, I will wait for you!’

[‘Feng Monarch’ is easy. Monarch of Ling-Bao Hall, Feng Zhiling it is!]

[But ‘I will wait for you’, that is confusing!]

[Is Feng Monarch of Ling-Bao Hall also... people from heavens?]

[Is he a recognized opponent to Master Bai?]

[It sounds just like so!]

[Well, since he is a recognized opponent to Master Bai, he should be in the same level as Master Bai!]

[By the way, who is the guy in cyan clothes? The one who flew up at the last minute? Nobody ever saw him before that...]

[He didn't look like a servant to Master Bai. He flew side by side with Master Bai after all. Maybe he is a guard!]

[I never knew there were so many gods living around us in this world...]

Hmm. What would Ling Wuxie feel if he knew that was how people thought of him?

[Damn it! I am a guard now? Without a name? God damn the bloody heavens! I am in the same league with Bai Chen in Human Realm Upon Heavens... I am just a tiny bit weaker! That's me, Ling Wuxie!]

Apparently, he had no chance to explain it to the people anymore!

...

# Chapter 638: Eternal Legend!

---

The bamboo forest, where Master Bai used to live.

There were hundreds of men on their knees together.

They looked up at the sky.

Even after the rainbows were all gone and Master Bai had left this world, these men were still staying on the floor sincerely.

They seemed like worshiping their god and escorting him back to the world of gods!

They were the superior cultivators who had been working for the House of the Chaotic Storms.

After a long time, somebody started to move.

"Master is gone."

"That's right... He really is..."

"I guess he won't return..."

They all felt lost.

Each of them had a ring on the finger.

In the rings, there were huge amount of money and books of secret cultivation method, also lots of treasures...

Any one of those rings was valuable enough for one man and his children to live a luxury life!

The wealth of any of these men could make Wan Zhenghao, even Ye Xiao jealous!

Master Bai did try what he could to make good arrangements for his loyal men.

"What should we do next?"

That was a question in all their hearts.

Hundreds of men here, all were in Sky Origin Stage, top levels, were all like kids, lost and blank, not knowing what to do next.

They really didn't have any plan.

"I will find a covert place and focus on cultivation." A big man with wild beard still kneeled on the floor, with his head lowered. He gloomily said, "I will spend my life to cultivate myself. I will try to be strong enough to rush up to that realm... I wish one day I can work for Master again up there. Even though I may fail, it always

feels better to be one tiny bit closer to him."

"That's right! I will cultivate too! Master just said it. 'Reunion in Human Realm Upon Heavens, and rebuild the House of the Chaotic Storms'! He has hope on us. He wants us to go to the real world he is from... and meet him again, and rebuild the House of the Chaotic Storm there!"

"That's right! We should all keep cultivating!"

One of them spoke in a low voice, "Didn't he say that if we feel lost, we can go to Ling-Bao Hall and pledge loyalty to Feng Monarch? He is the recognized opponent of Master. It should be the fastest way to get up to that realm to stay with Feng Monarch."

They all turned quiet all of a sudden. It was obviously a reasonable idea!

One man sighed. "Feng Monarch is truly brilliant man. If Master didn't show up, it may be a good thing that we all follow Feng Monarch."

"But... After working for Master, who on earth can we serve with sincerity anymore? Not a king! Not Feng Monarch!"

"That's true. If we follow him, it will be faster to get see Master again. But we will be Feng Monarch's men by then. What would Master feel when he sees us!"

"Loyal man won't serve two masters. We can never work for Feng Zhiling!"

"Agree! Let's find another way to cultivate ourselves."

"Let's go!"

Hundreds of them all stood up. They looked at the mountain, the bamboo forest, and the houses emotionally. Finally, tears was out!

They looked back again and again while walking out with tears on their faces.

When they walked out the bamboo forest, they all felt extreme pain in their hearts. Sorrow struck them.

They turned around and got down on their knees, shouting with tears, "Master... You must... Wait for us... Reunion in Human Realm Upon Heavens, and rebuild the House of the Chaotic Storm!"

These men left eventually.

None of them pledged loyalty to any forces.

They just disappeared in the world.

Nobody knew where they had gone.

After then, more and more martial artists rose up to the upper realm in the Land of Han-Yang...

...

Everyone was gone.

What was left were only the mountain, the bamboo forest and the houses.

They were still there, with silence.

This place remained a forbidden area.

No one was able to get in.

No one knew what was in it.

It just stayed there silently. The bamboo forest was still the same size. No leaves fell. It just stayed there time after time...

It became a mysterious area of the Land of Han-Yang...

Just like the legend of the House of the Chaotic Storms and Master Bai...

An eternal legend...

...

Master Bai finally left.

Ye Xiao suddenly felt a bit lost. A strange emotion was covering his heart, but he couldn't tell what it was.

Master Bai said something a while ago, which made Ye Xiao sigh earlier.

He was right.

Since Ye Xiao was reborn to this world and knew the existence of the House of the Chaotic Storms, Master Bai had been his main rival all the time in his heart!

All that he did, all that he wanted, all that he aimed at, was to defeat Master Bai and the House of the Chaotic Storms.

It was nearly impossible to do it. However, Ye Xiao pushed himself for it!

Now, his goal was gone.

Feng Monarch, who had been fighting against such a powerful opponent for such a long time, wouldn't think highly of anybody in this world.

Invincibility brings loneliness.

Nobody could defeat an invincible man, but an invincible man had nobody in the world to fight against!

They seemed the same, but the former one was his achievement, while the latter was his misery!

It was lonely at the top!

There was always only one person at the top. How could that not be lonely?

In fact, while Master Bai talked to him earlier, he had this feeling already, but not that deep-felt!

Suddenly, he felt so bored, and he sighed.

"What happened, Master? Do you feel ill?"

"No. It's just... I feel lonely, now that I no longer have an opponent." Ye Xiao shook his head. "I just can't get it together. I feel bored no matter what I do."

That was so arrogant.

Since Bing-Er knew Ye Xiao was also Feng Zhiling, she didn't think it was arrogant at all. Especially since Master Bai had left this world.

She knew that he must be lonely deep in his heart.

...

# Chapter 639: Reward Warrant Back

---

Bing-Er rolled her eyes and said, "It is a good thing to be invincible. That is peerless achievement. You should feel proud of it. Even if you may feel lonely, you should feel lonely some time later."

Ye Xiao was surprised. "Urh..."

"I read some novels in my spare time. There are some local tyrants. They are invincible in small places... They can bully people as they wish. They can even humiliate people's family. They are just doing whatever they want." Bing-Er kept rolling her eyes, trying to prove how 'good' it is to be invincible.

Ye Xiao was speechless. [I mean, my girl, am I a local tyrant to you? Is that a praise or...]

"You are bored. Why don't we try bullying others?" Bing-Er spoke with wide opened eyes, "Those tyrants bully poor people. Let's bully the tyrants then... How's that sound? It should be interesting! No matter what, you won't feel bored!"

Ye Xiao didn't seem thrilled at all. His face turned red. "Do you mean, I am a tyrant out of tyrants?"

"I do not mean it. You think so yourself. There is a saying... What is it... Oh... Not so, but quite close..." Bing-Er giggled, with her hand on the mouth.

"Humphed. Tyrants are bad guys. They do bad things on people. Do you understand? They capture girls. Do you know that? When a tyrant sees a beautiful girl like you, he will forcibly take her home to be his concubine... Do you know that..."

Ye Xiao gritted with his teeth and then realized deep in his heart, he wanted to be a tyrant right now. He couldn't hold it anymore. He wanted to be a tyrant here, at least for once...

Bing-Er moved coquettishly in his arms and said, "Master, you are not a tyrant..."

"Yes, I am! I am a tyrant! At least for now!" Ye Xiao's fire of desire in his heart was aroused by Bing-Er's coquettish act. He gasped and grabbed Bing-Er. He talked and ogled, "Little girl. Smooth skin. Perfect shape. How gorgeous. You are mine now. Come on. Come with me and you will have a happy and enjoyable life ever..."

"No... No... Help... Somebody help..." Bing-Er shouted, to cooperate.

"Humph! No? I want you! You can only say yes! It won't get you off no matter how loudly you shout! Why don't you save some energy for... what will happen next between us... Jajajaja..." Ye Xiao laughed in a weird voice. He held Bing-Er's waist and took her to the room. He kicked back on the door to close it... - Bang! -

In the room, there was a pornographic play taking place...

Ahem. Thirty million words abridged...

(TL's note: Blame the author, not the translator...)

...

Master Bai left this world in a world-shocking way. It aroused a huge disturbance in the world.

The House of the Chaotic Storms was finally gone!

Kings of the kingdoms all celebrated it!

[That bastard. Finally! He is gone! For so many years, I am suppressed like hell...]

[But... Before he left, he gave a sword... something called Holy Providence... to the Kingdom of Chen! Does it mean... the Kingdom of Chen is recognized as the heaven-sent?]

[How is that possible?]

[That is intolerable!]

Because of the sword, all the other kingdoms and forces in the Land of Han-Yang were sharing a bitter hatred.

They declared war to the Kingdom of Chen together!

All they wanted was to take the sword, Holy Providence!

The war was turning more and more dramatic.

The Kingdom of Chen had been fighting on four sides already. It wasn't sure to win, but was not defeated for sure!

On the west, Kingdom of Lan-Feng was pushing so hard. That was the only positive side for the enemies. The other three were not even close.

Zhan Qianshan was fighting against Prince Hua-Yang, Su Dingguo. The two great generals were fighting with lots of wise schemes. That was a fine match...

On the south, General Lan was shielded by the great mountain from the sky. It blocked the southern barbarians and the Kingdom of Jin-Yang.

General Lan didn't let them cross the line any closer.

The north...

There was no new reports from the north yet.

All people knew was that a huge fight happened a few days earlier. Ye Nantian won and kept chasing the grassland folks into the grassland. No news about him yet.

However, it was done in the north, as long as Ye Nantian's troops didn't get wiped out in the grassland.

To wipe out Ye Nantian's iron army... was just impossible.

In other words, the north was settled!

Hmm. Not entirely settled though. The only question would be, how long would the Northern Army dash about in the grassland. Once they were done in the north and went to the other three battles, the war would be entirely changed. The Kingdom of Chen would seize the victory for sure!

...

The next few days, Ling-Bao Hall was busy again.

The reward warrants were coming back to the Ling-Bao Hall from everywhere in the world.

That was weird. Ling-Bao Hall had branches everywhere in the world. Feng Monarch had said that people could get the reward in any branch, as long as there was proof of mission complete.

However, the assassins still chose to come to the headquarters in Kingdom of Chen no matter how far they were from!

It was like... those who didn't get to the headquarters and didn't see Feng Monarch in person... would not be recognized as qualified for the reward...

After all, even Master Bai, who was like a god, recognized Feng Monarch as his rival!

During these days, the guards on the gates of Kingdom of Chen could see many men of martial world, smiling, holding swords, taking a wooden box, walking into the city.

They looked like visiting their friends with great gifts.

Those wooden boxes were so exquisite like something priceless.

That was reasonable. In those boxes were the futures of these assassins... How could they not keep them safe?

However, the guards found that all that in the boxes were heads of dead men! That was not even close to exquisite!

The assassins wouldn't mind. They just want to exchange for money with it...

Thus, during these days, Ling-Bao Hall kept giving out money

like water-sprinkling.

...

# Chapter 640: All Kinds of Assassins!

---

The money Ling-Bao Hall had given away these days, if all was exchanged into silver, even though it was exaggerated to say it could fill the entire city, it was not to say it could totally fill up the royal house!

Whoever brought the head of anybody on the list to prove that he killed the target would leave with a huge amount of money!

Everything followed the reward warrant! No tricks! It was equally honest with aged people and child customers!

Surely, there might be some aged assassins, but never any child assassin yet. There was no chance to prove the equal honesty yet!

Ling-Bao Hall did provide fantastic service though. Whoever came to withdraw money would be absolute safe. Those who waited around Ling-Bao Hall to rob other's proof and try to snatch the reward would be put down at once inside the hall and get killed!

That was known to the entire Land of Han-Yang.

Because of that, those who thought they could snatch the reward from somebody weaker than them dared to do nothing.

[I am not going to make it, and I may lose my life for it! That won't work.]

Money was good, but people wouldn't exchange their lives for it!

At the end, those who took the heads to Ling-Bao Hall all walked wantonly to Ling-Bao Hall, and they would be safe!

Those who wanted to rob other assassins for the reward all gave up. They would rather kill a man on the list and take the reward in a proper way. That would be much safer!

The government got the order to let the assassins in, not to stand in their ways.

The guards would not do anything unnecessary. They would only look at those assassins, being jealous to them.

However, the assassins truly behaved themselves!

Even when they were bumped by somebody on the way, they would actually apologize first. "Sorry... My bad..."

They actually took the responsibility to solve any possible problem.

That was such a touching scene.

There was one assassin, who was in top one hundred assassins list, who brought his box to Chen-Xing City for the reward. When

he just entered the city, an old lady bumped on him fiercely. However, she wasn't that strong, so the eggs in her basket were broken. The yolk flew up and stained the assassin's clothes.

The lady didn't have a good temper really. She shouted, "You asshole! Don't you bring your eyes with you or what? Are you seeking death now?"

Well some women would call white black for their own interests. That was normal!

The assassin didn't talk.

The lady looked up at his face. He was full of murderous qi! The sword he carried seemed covered with cold qi. The box in his hand seemed to have the smell of blood. That was so overwhelming. The lady was scared so badly that she nearly lost her breath.

[He... he is... the people they are talking about recently... He is an assassin... with a head coming for the reward!]

[I... I bumped into an assassin? The yolk stained him... and I shouted at him... He is seeking death... seeking my death...]

[I am done!]

However, surprisingly, the assassin suddenly changed his expression. He tried so hard to make a smile and said, "Sorry. So sorry. That is my fault. Ahem. I broke your eggs. I apologize..."

Look..."

Then he took out a piece of silver and put it into the lady's hand.  
"Is this enough... for your eggs? Sorry. Please forgive me. Please don't be mad... I can give you more money if you want..."

Who on earth had seen such a polite assassin ever?

The lady was absolutely stunned. [What the hell?]

She held the silver in the hand. Till the assassin was gone far away, she hadn't come to herself yet...

[Ah! This is the assassin they said? He is a bit ugly indeed. But he was much more polite than the old folk next door. Did he do it because I am still beautiful and well-shaped? Hmm... Must be...] The lady was lost in her beautiful imagination... She thought of the good words the old folk who lived next to her talked to her!

Some other assassins saw what happened. They were shocked. Their jaws nearly fell off to the ground.

[What the hell?]

[Is that really the assassin in the top one hundred list?]

[The legendary assassin?]

[Since when did he become so polite to people?]

In fact, that assassin was quite upset about it.

[I really didn't want to be polite to her.]

[The head in my hand is worth one billion!]

[One billion silver!]

[A small leak will sink a great ship...]

[If I killed someone and became a wanted criminal in Kingdom of Chen, how do I go get the reward?]

[To give up one billion just because I got bumped?]

[Am I that stupid?]

[That lady just bumped into me and said something bad. That was easy. Even if she wanted to fxck me, I would have to just accept it and please her...]

[As long as I can get the one billion safely...]

[Bloody heavens! With one billion who would be an assassin? Who would want to risk one's life for living? I will buy a huge

house and marry some women. I will have a bunch of kids and never show up in the martial world! Beautiful life!]

[I won't kill anybody anymore!]

[Now I am not far from my goal. Even though somebody started a quarrel with me, I will step back and give up on it. I won't fight. I just want my beautiful life!]

[There was a story... What is it? Right... A wealthy man doesn't want to stay under the eave, because he didn't want to die being hit by the tile!]

[I am going to be a polite, elegant, and well-educated wealthy man. I will never do any dangerous thing again. I have one billion... Why should I do business like you poor folks!]

The assassins looked around at the other assassins, who were looking at him with surprise. He just sighed and then walked in to town.

[Pah... I am not one of them anymore... I will quit being an assassin soon!]

[Those assassins... So annoying. Why did they look at me like that... I am going to be rich now! Don't put me in the assassin's list anymore. I am scared by any assassins...]

...

# Chapter 641: Boundless Lake

---

So many assassins got in the city for the reward in a peaceful way.

After that, some smart ones would disappear right away. Nobody knew where they went after they walked out of the Ling-Bao Hall sneakily...

They surely whould hide with such a great amount of money. Opportunity makes the thief.

[What if I get robbed? I am a rich man now!]

As for the ones who weren't that capable, they would just stay in Ling-Bao Hall begging for protection...

Wan Zhenghao really didn't quite understand it.

Were those men really assassins?

How could they be so fearful? That was totally not how an assassin looked like!

Apparently, Boss Wan didn't really understand human nature. Those who didn't have money would risk their lives for it, while those who had it would cherish their lives as much as they could!

That was clear and obvious!

When the Boundless Lake assassins came for the rewards, things came to the climax!

At that time, Ning Biluo, Liu Changjun and Zhao Pingtian were all back. Most of the assassins of Ling-Bao Hall were back too.

Coincident or not, while Feng Monarch was talking to the three assassins in the room, a report about Boundless Lake assassins coming for the reward arrived.

They didn't hesitate, so he went out for them.

Ye Xiao was always calm, but even he was stunned.

Ning Biluo and Liu Changjun were totally shocked and then burst into wild laughters!

Even though they hated Boundless Saint so much, they couldn't help laughing loud!

Over a dozen men walked in through the main gate of Ling-Bao Hall!

They were not dressed in black suit like other assassins. Instead, they were wearing silky clothes like some lords. They stood together like a bunch of flowers. Everyone was smiling. Even

though they were still emitting cold qi, but not that much.

They looked exactly like some successful men.

The one who looked like their leader had a pale face and a slim body. The clothes was definitely over size on him. That looked quite improper somehow. However, he was tall, so that made it better...

He was Boundless Saint.

This was the first time Ning Biluo and others saw Boundless Saint's face.

This was also the first time Boundless Saint revealed his face in public.

Surely, Ye Xiao and his men all knew that he must be Boundless Saint, but they didn't know whether that was his original face.

Boundless Saint showed up here in such a hilarious way, meaning Boundless Lake was no longer existing in the world.

In fact, if Ning Biluo had enough money to take care the huge lot of people he needed to look after, he would have resigned for a long time and lived a wonderful life of his own.

Those men in the hilarious clothes must be the only golden label

assassins under Boundless Saint's lead.

Now that they all showed up together. They must have gained a lot during this warrant event.

Surely, other than that, if something unexpected happened, they could be able to solve it...

Apparently, they cared so much about it this time, because they needed the money, and also desired the bright future the money would bring to them...

Besides all that, they had one decision.

Ye Xiao's expression in eyes changed.

He suddenly had some strange feeling.

Ning Biluo's smile was fading away. His face started to look dark. He realized something too.

"Feng Monarch." Boundless Saint's mirthless and feminine voice sounded, "This time, after fighting so hard, we chopped off many heads that you put on the wanted list. I wonder if you will keep your promise, even to us?"

Ye Xiao nodded. "Absolutely! No matter who you are, friends or enemies to me, as long as you bring us the heads we want, we will

give you the money!"

Boundless Saint felt relieved. The monarch of Ling-Bao Hall was not the one he knew before. Feng Zhiling was spoken highly by Master Bai in front of the world. Boundless Saint surely was a bit scared. Now that Feng Zhiling gave him the answer he wanted, he said, "Since so, we will take our money later. Now, please, if you don't mind, Feng Monarch, I have some private matter to solve now. It is the only thing that bothers me now. I guess it is better to solve it earlier."

Ye Xiao took in a deep breath and said, "Fair enough. Of course I don't. Please go ahead!"

Boundless Saint turned around facing Ning Biluo. He looked weird all of a sudden.

His expression was complex, but it contained eagerness.

Ning Biluo was also showing a complex expression. He actually felt like hiding away.

He seemed to know what Boundless Saint would say to him. His face was full of pain and contradiction.

Zhao Pingtian sighed.

The top three assassins in the world were all there.

Nobody knew better about the enmity between Ning Biluo and Boundless Saint than Zhao Pingtian.

"Ning Biluo, I guess you know what I am going to say," Boundless Saint said it peacefully.

"I know. Of course I do. Since you came in, when I saw you all show up here, I knew." Ning Biluo took in a deep breath, "But it is meaningless to say it now. Don't you think... Don't you think this is ridiculous?"

Boundless Saint's eyes turned gloomy and he said, "I know I am being naive here. I know you think so. But... I am tired of it... I don't want that kind of life anymore."

Ning Biluo spoke in a terrifying voice, "You are tired. You don't want it now. Now you have a perfect opportunity to get away and live happily for the rest of your life! How about those innocent lives that you killed? What for them? Didn't they want to live a happy life? Who took their lives? Who made the tragedy?"

Boundless Saint looked at him for a while. Suddenly, he turned around pointing at the thirteen assassins behind him and said, "Fine! You want to talk about lives. I will talk about lives! Do you know how many people were there in Boundless Lake? Do you know the twenty-four golden label assassins? Do you know the one hundred and eight silver assassins? Do you know the five hundred iron label assassins?"

...

# Chapter 642: Quit the Martial World!

---

"Now I am telling you. One hundred and eight silver label assassins are all dead. Five hundred iron label, dead! Golden label assassins, there were twenty-one before we went for the reward this time! Now these men you see here are all!"

"There are only fourteen people left in Boundless Lake, including me!"

"Boundless Lake, less than ten percent are alive. Boundless Lake is gone in this world! Do you understand?" Boundless Saint talked louder and louder. There even seemed to be tears shining in his eyes.

"Ning Biluo, answer me. Why do we live as assassins?" Boundless Saint looked at Ning Biluo.

Ning Biluo sighed.

[What for?]

[What else could it be?]

Boundless Saint didn't wait till he answered. He kept talking, "We take money and we kill for it! It is a regressive and unethical profession! It is something people all hate! But we do it for our family, for people we love, for ourselves! For a better life!"

"We don't have anything else to make our life better, except the martial arts. If we go to be somebody's guards, we will get paid even less than dogs! We won't even be able to feed our family! If we serve our kingdom, we only get that slight amount of money! How many people can you feed with that money? Can it afford you a better life for your next generation?"

"What kind of world it is now? Do you know that? It's the world of the rich! No matter how capable you are, if you don't have money, you don't get to eat! You want to eat, you have to rob! You have to break the law! Do you want a life like that? A poor man who is an invincible martial artist?"

"You will have to kneel, to bow, to flatter, to kiss some asses, just to get yourself fed well!"

"I am vile! My actions were vile! I hurt many innocents. What did I do that for? You have your responsibility to take, but I have mine too! Why don't you ask my brothers there, if they have their own responsibilities to take? Why don't you ask my dead brothers whether they have their responsibility too? There are things we have to do no matter whether we like it or not in the world. If I can help the ones I love by hurting someone I don't, I will do it, and I won't regret!"

"I did frame you. I hurt you. But... why? We are in opposite positions! We both do things for money! There are so many rich men in this world, but how many of them would give us money to kill somebody?"

"This is a small market!"

"Fame decides value! You are the No. 1 assassin in the world, so I will never be able to get the best offer!"

"I can't get the best offer, so I have to get as many offers as I can!"

"You are a big rock on my way to a better life. Of course I will kill you! Who else should I kill, if not you?"

"You think I am dirty and outrageous. Even though it is outrageous to say this, I will still say it. I don't regret!"

"I know I will go to hell after I die! So what? One should take the responsibility no matter what! If I can't make it up when I am alive, I shall do it after I die! Who knows?"

"You occupied the highest position as an assassin, leading a bunch of useless guys. You are not capable of killing all the targets, but you still held them all. You are exactly a dog in the manger..."

"You are known as the No. 1 assassin, and everybody believes it. They would rather wait for you than come to me!"

"What should I do?"

"I have to kill you! I have to make the No. 1 go!"

"You took so many jobs that you can't finish for your living! I

tried to kill you for my own living! What's the difference?"

"Now that I am going to take the reward here, my life is settled well. I can get rid of my terrible name. I can change my name even my face to live on... I can go live the life I dreamt of!"

"So we come. I knew it could be dangerous for us, but we still came. I am here to speak to you. I want to tell you that we should close things between us."

"Do you know, I have put all I have in Boundless Lake in risk for the reward today! Those small targets are all chopped off."

"Those valuable ones are so well guarded by superior cultivators! They are all in high social positions! You know how much it can take to chop off the head of one man of that kind! We couldn't even imagine how difficult it was before we really did it!"

The thirteen golden label assassins all lowered their heads. There seemed to be tears in their eyes.

"Before we started, hundreds of my men stared at me and said, 'Saint, are we going to quit the martial world after this mission? Are we going to have enough money to live good lives that we always want?'"

"They asked me. Hundreds of my brothers asked me at the same time. They longed for it. They wanted it. They dreamed for it. The comfortable lives!"

"After we got to it, one after another, they died there..."

"We killed for money and we put our lives in danger. That is the rule. But... losing one brother after another..."

"Our brothers covered us with their own bodies and their lives, so that we could make it out. They killed the targets in a suicidal way. They chopped off the heads, but they were smashed into flesh themselves..."

"Over five hundred brothers died these days for the rewards!"

"Over two hundred of them didn't even have the chance to say something before they died."

"Ning Biluo, do you know what the rest of them said before they died?"

Boundless Saint's face turned red. His eyes were like filled by flames. He spoke in a deep voice, "Some of them said, 'Brothers, spend the money for me'... These were mostly orphans who didn't have families... The rest of them said, 'Please take care of my families... Brothers... Please...'"

...

# Chapter 643: Kill Me! End It!

---

"Moreover, not all the most capable man live till the last. My brother, the vice-Saint, before he died, he told me with a bitter smile, 'Make Feng Monarch pay... Me and our brothers down there will curse him day and night without stopping. He pays, we will pray for him even in hell... When you get the money, lead those who still live to brighter lives. Do not kill for money anymore... Otherwise, we won't rest in peace'..."

Boundless Saint was already choking with sobs.

"We killed. We killed so many targets. This time, we put our lives on it! We killed desperately."

"We did it for the money. We did it, because we knew this money would give us better lives."

"We might not be able to survive and get the money, but our brothers can, our families can! That is why we fought so desperately!"

"We kill for money, and we also die for money!"

"Before we get the money, we have to end it between some guys who wanted us dead. We have to finish the enmity from the old days. Ning Biluo, you are the best among them. You are the first one I need to get done with!"

"As long as you still hate us, no matter where we will go, how long we will hide, we will be worrying all the time!"

"We will worry that enemies would show up someday!"

"You will break everything we have, our homes that we have been dreaming of!"

"You know what, before this, we didn't even have dreams! Why? Because we didn't have money! We got over a million to kill a target. Not a small amount, but we shared the money and we spent it on food and medicines. We were always short for money. Some of us got over ten thousand, and some got a few hundreds."

"Some of them spent it up right away. We were living lives that had no hope. Why save money? To get enough money at once. That is what we want!"

"That will give us hope! That we can lean the rest of our lives on it!"

"But we didn't have enough money, and we didn't know how long we would live more. That's why we spent money generously! No matter how much it was, we could spend it all in one night!"

"Ning Biluo, do you even understand it?"

"You are living a good life now, following Feng Monarch, the rich guy. You don't need to worry about food or others. You don't even

need to worry for those people you are looking after. What about us?"

"Now we have the opportunity, we can have enough money to feed ourselves for the rest of our lives, even the lives of our next generations. That is why we would love to fight like that! That is why we were willing sacrifice for it!"

"There are still brothers left anyway."

"There will be some of us who can live on the good days we dreamt of!"

"Today, I am here, to end the old grudge between you and me! Once and for all!"

"I don't want to live in fear. We spent too much to live a good life in the future!"

Boundless Saint spoke it all out.

He had been suppressing his vigorous qi since he stepped in Ling-Bao Hall. Now it was released and pointed at Ning Biluo!

Ye Xiao listened to him and had a weird feeling in his heart.

He found it really difficult to distinguish right and wrong at the moment.

It was good to talk too much.

The Boundless Lake was the most fierce and brutal assassins group!

Now, these guys were carrying wounds and dreams in their hearts...

Ye Xiao noticed Boundless Saint was locking on Ning Biluo. The fight was unavoidable now. However, he sharply noticed that Boundless Saint didn't really want to win the fight. He was ready to die in the fight!

"Why don't you choose another path out? Ning Biluo came to the Ling-Bao Hall. Liu Changjun came. You all could. Why didn't you?" Ye Xiao frowned.

"Of course we thought about it, but Ning Biluo was already in here. The hatred is deep seated! I was worried... Even if we came, there might be only one who could stay, me or him."

Boundless Saint smiled bitterly. "If I came and fought against Ning Biluo, who would you help? I guess there was a clear answer. We would definitely fight! And if we fought, it would only end by death! That was the reality!"

"If we came, Boundless Lake would have fallen long ago. None of us would survive!"

Ye Xiao was speechless. That was strong point though. The two of them hated each other so much. It wasn't easy for others to solve it!

"Ning Biluo is here, so we would never come! We wouldn't!" Boundless Saint took in a deep breath. He held back the tears in his eyes.

"We would rather fight in the martial world like wolves than bow and scrape like dogs!"

Boundless Saint said and then suddenly shouted, "Excellent!"

"I have never spoken like this in my life. For so many years, these words were suppressed in my chest! Now, I finally have a chance to say it all out. I said it to Feng Monarch of Ling-Bao Hall, Ning Biluo and Zhao Pingtian! It feels so good!"

Ning Biluo spoke with a dark face, "You feel good now? What about me?"

Boundless Saint humped coldly and said, "I am here to make you feel good. You will feel excellent!"

"How?" Ning Biluo frowned.

"Kill me. How about that?"

Boundless Saint drew out his sword and made a cold light with it. The light shot to the floor under Ning Biluo and stuck on it.

The sword was swaying, making sounds.

Boundless Saint stared at Ning Biluo and peacefully spoke, "I never used a sword. I barely carry a sword. Now, I take a sword with me because I want to end this. Ning Biluo, take the sword and cut my throat!"

"Kill me! All the old grudge ends here! I take all your hatred. Do it quick. You will get it over too. How excellent!"

Boundless Saint took in a deep breath and said, "But you have to promise that after I die, you will let it go. You won't go after my thirteen brothers afterwards! Please, let them go with the money and live the lives we have been dreaming of!"

"That is, me and over a thousand brothers, our dream!"

...

# Chapter 644: All Ended

---

"Saint!" thirteen assassins shouted at the same time and then... - Clang, clang, clang! - They all drew out their weapons, looking at Ning Biluo fiercely!

Murderous qi was all around the place. Was a big fight about to happen?

"What the hell do you think you are doing?" Boundless Saint was furious. "Put down your weapons, all of you! What is this? Are you all going to violate my will?"

"This is our business together! We can't let you bear it alone! No matter how unforgivable it is, we will take the responsibility together! We came all the way through together!" An assassin with a cold face said, "I don't care if we can still have the money or not. We can't let you die here!"

"Bullsh\*t! That is one billion!" Boundless Saint slapped on his face and shouted, "Miss this opportunity and we will never be able to reach our dream! Do you want your brothers to die for nothing?"

"If you die like this, we don't want that money, even if it is one trillion!" A few golden label assassins said, "We die, then we die. Since the day we became assassins, we never thought we could die in happiness!"

Boundless Saint finally raged up and shouted, "You bunch of pricks! How dare you talk to me like that? I am not dead yet! Are

you telling me you won't listen to my order? Do you own your own lives now? Think about the people behind you! That is easy. Just fight here and die! What about them? Do you want me to die in regret? Do you want your brothers to die for nothing?"

Thirteen assassins looked at him with tears dropping down.

"Listen to me. All of you. Live well. Be nice. The future we all dreamt of is in front of you. Cherish it. Live every second with your full hearts for me..."

Boundless Saint continued with sorrow, "Tell our next generations to go on the right track... To cultivate martial arts or to attend school, I don't care. Just don't live the lives we did..."

"If they will live in mediocrity, that is fine... Much better than getting killed in the martial world. We have money now. We have lots of money. Just spend it as you like..." His voice was getting hoarse.

He stepped ahead and said, "Ning Biluo, I killed many of your brothers, and I led you to quite a miserable situation. I know you have dreamt about killing me countless times. I know. Today you have your chance. I am here. Just do it."

He blandly smiled. "If you think this is humiliating you, fine, I will fight."

Zhao Pingtian was calm. He kept looking at the thirteen golden

label assassins.

No matter what happened next, if the thirteen men moved, Zhao Pingtian would take action.

As Boundless Saint said, it was not about right or wrong, it was about different position.

Zhao Pingtian would always stand by Ning Biluo's side, since he was now one of Ling-Bao Hall.

No matter what story Boundless Lake had, Zhao Pingtian was loyal to his position!

Boundless Saint looked at Ning Biluo, but he was talking to the thirteen assassins, "Listen! My last order! Do not move! I am warning you! If you move a bit, I will die with regret! When I go to hell, I will hate you forever! Whoever dares to help me later is never my brother! Never brother to our departed brothers either!"

He knew.

He knew that if Ning Biluo killed him, he would not harm his brothers.

If his brothers did something stupid, the fourteen of them would die together here.

Ning Biluo, Zhao Pingtian and Feng Monarch were all there!

Boundless Saint came here to solve the last problem for his brothers. He wanted his brothers to have a peaceful afterlife. If they died here instead, that would be ridiculous.

That was why he gave them such an order!

Ye Xiao was watching them quietly.

He couldn't make the decision for Ning Biluo, and he shouldn't!

Ning Biluo stood there and stayed quiet. Suddenly, he reached his hand to the sword and drew it out.

The long sword was pointing at Boundless Saint's chest.

Boundless Saint smiled. "Great! Now you are getting on it! Like a man. Remember this. My death will end it all!"

And then he threw his chest, raised his head and closed his eyes.

He looked so casual!

An eye for an eye!

That was the absolute rule in every assassin's heart, loud and

clear.

It would come to this moment sooner or later.

If Boundless Saint died and his brothers could live peacefully, he would love to die!

"Fine. As you wish then. One sword strike ends it all!"

Ning Biluo closed his eyes, showing a complex expression on face.

"Deal! Do it." Boundless Saint closed his eyes and smiled. "Like you said, one sword strike ends it all. To die under Ning Biluo's sword makes my life glorious."

Ning Biluo hunched and then his sword struck out like lightning!

This sword strike agglomerated all his power in his life! The most powerful strike ever!

Fast! Accurate! Concentrated!

It was so fast that even if Boundless Saint wanted to defend it, he wasn't able to!

With a cold light, it got in and went through Boundless Saint's

chest!

Lots of blood burst out!

Such a powerful and overwhelming sword attack, of course it wouldn't miss the target!

The golden label assassins exclaimed. A few of them suddenly felt their blood boiling. Their eyes were red. They couldn't think of anything else now. They just wanted to rush out and kill Ning Biluo!

Things seemed to be ended right there!

Boundless Saint was dead?

Boundless Lake was doomed?

Ning Biluo eased the hand and stepped back a bit, saying, "Whatever it is, it ends in my sword attack. From now on, you and me, we are even!"

Boundless Saint was still standing straight up there. He slowly opened his eyes. He was surprised by that strike. "What a fast sword attack. Now I have to admit that you, Ning Biluo, is the world's No. 1 Assassin! To die under such powerful sword strike, I won't..."

"Hmm? Wait..."

Boundless Saint suddenly stopped. He couldn't believe it. He was in complex emotions all of a sudden. He had lost so much blood that he should have fallen, but he just didn't!

...

# Chapter 645: Convinced!

---

The assassins there were all in the top range of the assassins in the world, and they knew the most about the art of killing in the world. Ning Biluo's sword strike contained all his power, and it was indeed a murderous strike. Boundless Saint was even cut in the vitals, so it was impossible for him to survive!

Why was he still standing and breathing?

He didn't die, and instead he could even talk that much. He said, "Why? Why am I not dead? Ning Biluo, was it really the most powerful attack in your life? I am sure it was... but..."

Ning Biluo coldly spoke, "You and me, we have deep hatred. I would never hold back on that! That was the best I could do!"

Boundless Saint was still standing, and the blood was still bursting out. He should have lost ten percent of the blood in his body now. Why was he still standing there? And he looked still energetic as ever?

Was it a momentary recovery of consciousness before death?

Not really!

After a while, Boundless Saint apparently felt something. He quivered and said, "Ning Biluo... What... What is this? I despise you on this sword strike... This is unfair... How can you become

the King of Assassins?"

Hmm?

The others were all surprised. [What happened?]

Ning Biluo's attack was pure and fast. None of the others could defend that attack. Even Boundless Saint said it himself that he was impressed too. Why did he change his mind just after such a short time?

Ning Biluo coldly laughed. "Despise me or not, that is your own business. Fair or not, it is your call to make. I have attacked with all my energy. Your blood bursts out and washes your sin. You mean nothing to me from now on!"

Boundless Saint's eyes were shining. "Blood bursts out and washes my sin! Well said! One sword strike ends it all!"

After that, he held the sword which was stabbed in his body and drew it out directly.

As the sword was drawn out off the body, the blood burst faster and faster. When the sword left the body, lots of blood burst out again. The sword was covered by his blood!

Not to mention how badly he was wounded, the loss of blood could have killed him. Boundless Saint was completely a man in blood now!

"One sword strike ends it all!" Ning Biluo blandly spoke, "From now on, to live or die, it is your own business. You can just go live the life that you deserve! Despise me or not, from now on, you and me, we are even. You live your happy life, and I will go on my solitary one. That is it."

Boundless Saint's face turned pale, because he had lost too much blood. He laughed and said, "Fine... I am still not your match. I guess I will never catch up with you. This sword strike... I will never forget this. Maybe someday, I will get back to you for it."

The golden label assassins were both surprised and happy. They were all superior assassins, so they knew that even though Boundless Saint had lost much of his blood, he was still far from dying. They were not quite sure how Ning Biluo did it, but they were sure the latter wouldn't kill their leader.

They also thought, [This is not very well done here today. What a horrible sword attack. It actually only hurt him but didn't kill him. Ning Biluo was apparently lenient about that. Why would he say something like he is going to take revenge someday... Truly not so wise!]

Ye Xiao's eyes lit up. He looked at Ning Biluo. He was comforted.

Ye Xiao was the only person among everyone who had seen all things thoroughly. He even knew it clearer than Boundless Saint and Ning Biluo!

First, Ning apparently had cultivated the martial art Ye Xiao gave him to certain levels... He was quite good at it already.

Ning Biluo's sword art was fierce, fast and concentrated!

It wasn't difficult to make it fast and fierce, but to be concentrated required both his inner power and sword art to work together at the same time!

To be concentrated, he needed to perfectly handle his cultivation method and to operate his purest spiritual qi!

That sword strike was indeed his most powerful one!

Fast, accurate and fierce. The spiritual qi that was hidden in the sword didn't leak out at all!

Ning Biluo had to make that attack, for his own brothers or for Boundless Saint's brothers!

He understood Boundless Saint's difficulty, but it was still something that needed to be ended. He had to strike it and end it!

There must be blood!

Otherwise, how could it sweep the enmity and grudge of all those days in the past?

Ning Biluo stabbed his sword out and went through Boundless Saint's body, fast and accurate. However, it didn't hurt his organs at all. Ning Biluo did spend much of his thought for it. It would make Boundless Saint bleed badly, but it wouldn't kill him. Boundless Saint was a Sky Origin Stage cultivator. He wouldn't die because of the loss of blood. As long as he could still operate martial art, he could hold it in a short time. After a few days, he would be recovered. Boundless Saint truly didn't get hurt any seriously.

Boundless Saint was a good assassin. Of course, he knew what that sword strike meant. When he saw that strike, he was surprised by its power. He thought Ning Biluo would definitely kill him this time, and he was about to lose his life.

However, after getting cut through, he was still standing energetically. That was so strange, so he operated his martial art to check his own body. He immediately knew what was going on. That was why he said he would despise Ning Biluo. He thought Ning Biluo was being too womanish to spare his life. However, when Ning Biluo said that the blood had ended it all, he finally knew Ning Biluo was being kind and thoughtful.

That was how it could end afterwards. When he said he would get back to Ning Biluo for it, he meant he would return the favor for it!

Ning Biluo and Boundless Saint's business had occupied much of the time. However, only Ye Xiao thoroughly knew everything between them. The others only knew some of the truth!

...

# Chapter 646: Witness

---

Ning Biluo shook his head when he heard Boundless Saint wanted to return the favor. He blandly spoke, "One sword strike was out, and it is all finished. Nothing more needs to be done in the future."

Boundless Saint nodded. A smile appeared on his pale face as he said, "No matter what, I owe you this."

And then he lowered his head and saw the sword wound on his chest. He said, "Wait. I still want to ask why you would do this?"

Ning Biluo was a bit lost too. He spoke in a low voice, "It is just... we have the same dream. Your dream was the dream me and my brothers had..."

He sighed lightly and stopped talking.

Boundless Saint felt guilty and woeful. Ning Biluo's brothers died mostly because of him...

Ye Xiao slightly sighed and loudly spoke, "One sword strike is done. Come get the money then! Haha. It is worth celebrating. There are fourteen assassins resigning from the world. And there are fourteen rich folks in the world! Congratulations! We hope you all live a happy life with your wife, your children and your families!"

The others all laughed.

Boundless Saint laughed too. He looked so weird when he laughed. Apparently, he barely really laugh happily for so many years. He barely knew how to be happy. However, he said, "Not fourteen rich folks. Nine hundred and sixteen rich folks."

Thirteen golden assassins said at the same time, "Yes. Nine hundred and sixteen rich folks."

They all laughed. It was warm and peaceful.

"Brothers, show what we have now!" Boundless Saint shouted. Suddenly, over seven hundred boxes were taken out from the space rings by the assassins. Boxes piled up like a small mountain.

Ye Xiao made a hint, then Zhao Pingtian, Wan Zhenghao and Liu Changjun walked over to check on the boxes, so as to confirm the amount.

That was a requested process. No matter what, the numbers must be figured out right!

Boundless Saint said to Ye Xiao, "Feng Monarch, we have killed seven hundred and thirty-six targets this time. These are all figures beyond middling. The money we have should be one hundred eight billion."

Ye Xiao nodded, "Good."

"One hundred eight billion, we will take ninety-six billion. The rest of it, we want to give it to Ning Biluo as compensation for his loss. There are families of his departed brothers... I am sure he needs more money than we do."

Boundless Saint's face looked calm. "I guess it should be close to enough... this amount of money."

Ning Biluo took in a deep breath and said, "I appreciate it, but I can't take this money."

"What? You despise it? It stink for you? Is it dirty to you?" Boundless Saint turned around looking at Ning Biluo. "We are assassins. No one is any nobler. What makes you think you can despise us? You think I will be afraid of you because you made that sword attack? This is matter of principle! We have to make it clear today!"

Ning Biluo opened his mouth and then closed it. He stayed quiet for a while and then said, "I was wrong. I will take it!"

All the others, including Ye Xiao, were stunned... [Is that... really Ning Biluo? You sure that is not a disguised one? Ning Biluo said he was wrong?]

"Great! What a man! A man committed his fault. You actually declined the money. I thought you must get seriously damaged on your head. You used to be super stingy. You are crazy about money... You even took those dozens thousand taels of silver tasks

from others..."

Boundless saint humped and continued with a smile, "We have a plan though. Two hundred sixteen million for the nine hundred two brothers' families. It isn't a huge number, but it should be enough for them to live good lives."

"The fourteen of us will take the rest. Feng Monarch, Ning Biluo, you may want to laugh at me. We planned more for ourselves." He continued, "From now on, we will take our families, also some of our men's families, and find somewhere nice. We are going to give them a wonderful life... That is what we have to do as the ones who survived."

"I didn't die. So I guess I am going to shamelessly take the unreasonable big share of the seventy billion. My brothers will blame me if I take too little. I will take eighteen billion then. Fifty-two billion for the thirteen of them. Each of them gets four billion."

After that, all the others' eyes lit up.

Ye Xiao and Ning Biluo too.

That was strange how Boundless Saint assigned the money.

He said he would take an unreasonable a big share, but everybody knew that he was actually taking less than he should.

When an assassin group got money from the tasks, most of it would go to the leader. The others usually couldn't get even a dime!

Boundless Saint should at least get half of it. Nobody would disagree!

Eighteen billion seemed to be a big number, but it was less than thirty percent!

It was so uncommon to have somebody who could do it so selflessly.

"I have to say this to you all, because I want Feng Monarch and Brother Ning to be the witnesses." Boundless Saint took in a deep breath. His sharp eyes looked at the thirteen brothers. "Now, we still don't have the money yet. We can be calm and generous, but when we get the money, maybe some of us will change... It is hard to say. I have to put it clear here in advance."

"Since I asked Feng Monarch and Brother Ning to witness this, I hope you two can kindly do me this favor. If any of the fourteen of us dares to do anything vile to get more money, even take it all... I beg you, Feng Monarch and Brother Ning, you must kill him right away! Thanks!"

"Why can't you go kill him? Isn't it even appropriate that you go kill him?" Zhao Pingtian asked.

"Not really." Boundless Saint laughed. "Maybe I am the one who give in to devils? Maybe I die before that happens? I have considered it all. Hahaha..."

Ye Xiao sighed.

Boundless Saint was blocking every way around. He didn't leave any chance for anybody to turn vile.

If not, maybe there would be somebody who killed the others and took the money... It wasn't rare, such things.

It is always easy to get through adversity together, but difficult to share happiness together!

That was dozens of billion!

Who didn't want it?

...

# Chapter 647: A Bunch of Wastes

---

Boundless Saint was laughing when he said that he might be the one who turned vile and he might die before that happened... However, that was not joking!

It was possible!

Boundless Saint was asking for an insurance for everybody!

Ye Xiao seriously said, "Don't worry. I will! If that happens in the future, I will post a reward warrant to hunt him down. At the mean time, me, Ning Biluo, Zhao Pingtian and Liu Changjun will do it ourselves too! No matter where he is, we will get him!"

And then he waved his hand. Fourteen light spots shot out and hit the fourteen men.

Then the light spots disappeared.

"Those are spiritual mind marks of me. With that mark, no matter where you go, I will trace you down! However, I don't hope that I have to do it!" Ye Xiao said, "If any of you do any unforgivable thing, I guarantee that you won't get away. Remember what I, Feng Zhiling, say today!"

Boundless Saint and his thirteen men all took a breath of relief. "Thanks, Feng Monarch!"

Before this, no matter how it was well planned, they truly couldn't trust themselves.

They had lived in the martial world for so many years. They knew what they were!

Brothers were always loyal when they were going through adversity, however, when it was about money, a lot of money, everyone wanted to enjoy more than they could!

No matter what, they could be relieved now.

Feng Monarch gave them a promise for that.

That was absolutely powerful enough!

Although they felt a bit weird carrying the marks of Feng Monarch... as long as they wouldn't do anything stupid, it wouldn't make any difference!

One should fear no marks if he wouldn't do anything wrong!

At this moment, Wan Zhenghao finally finished the counting.

"Money, heads, both counted. The number is correct. Exactly the same amount of money." Wan Zhenghao said, "Monarch, shall we..."

Ye Xiao waved his hand and said, "Take ninety-two million for Ning Biluo. The rest to Boundless Saint."

Wan Zhenghao nodded and went for that arrangement.

Thirteen golden label assassins were all breathing heavily.

The money was going to be theirs soon.

Wan Zhenghao handed over a space ring. Boundless Saint opened it without hesitation. - Splash! - Notes poured out and piled on the floor like a small mountain.

"Count it!"

Boundless Saint shouted.

Two golden label assassins stepped out and started to count. Wan Zhenghao and Liu Changjun went over to help.

To count it under everybody's watch.

Both sides felt it safe.

Even real brothers should get a clearly counted number, not to mention that they were still enemies not long before.

However, while the notes were all shown, everybody stopped breathing.

Boundless Saint looked calm, but in fact he was staring at the money and couldn't move his sight. He kept swallowing, and his eyes showed some green lights like the eyes of wolves. The other standing golden label assassins were all swallowing while looking at the notes. Some of them started to sweat badly.

The two assassins who were counting the money looked thrilled. They were the first two fellows to touch the money among their brothers. That was quite a different feeling than just watching!

Even Ning Biluo, Zhao Pingtian and Liu Changjun were shocked.

Only three people were still calm. One was Wan Zhenghao. He wasn't excited at all. He just felt painful...

Ye Xiao was one of the three. He looked at the others and wanted to say something, but he heard somebody said with disdainfulness, "A bunch of wastes!"

It wasn't loud, but it was clear.

Ye Xiao was surprised. He turned his head and looked over, only to see Bing-Er. Bing-Er looked at the notes on the floor with indifference in her eyes!

She just didn't care.

"Bing-Er?" Ye Xiao looked at Bing-Er. She was one of the three too!

Bing-Er turned over and saw Ye Xiao. She was confused. "Master, what is wrong?"

Ye Xiao nodded and then asked, "What... What did you say just now?"

He still couldn't believe that Bing-Er would say that!

That was so indifferent. Her words were cold, like there was ice in it.

"What did I say?" Bing-Er was confused and looked around. She didn't understand. "I said nothing..."

Ye Xiao was speechless.

[What? What the hell?]

[I am pretty sure it was Bing-Er. I heard it!]

Ye Xiao stared at her with fever in eyes. Bing-Er was panicking. She was confused and scared, almost cried out. She said, "Master, I... I really didn't say anything..."

Ye Xiao didn't dare to push her too much. She was already scared. He held her in his arms and said, "Hmm. That's fine. You didn't say it. I was wrong. My fault..."

Bing-Er nodded, cuddling Ye Xiao's arms. Her heart was beating fast.

Boundless Saint calmed down finally. He looked around and saw the unbelievable scene. His eyes nearly popped out because he was shocked by what he saw!

[What... What the hell... Feng Monarch, who is definitely going to be the world's No.1 Superior Cultivator!]

[How come... How come he would be with such a... an ugly woman?]

[It is usual to have a maid... But she is so ugly and he looks so caring to her? He is holding her?]

[Look at that horrible howling woman... Oh my god I am going to be scared to death!]

[That... Am I have an delusion here?]

[Hmmm. Not really. Feng Monarch truly... has a special taste... So special!]

"Hmm? Boundless Saint, why are you looking at me?" Ye Xiao noticed him, so he asked confusedly.

"Ahem... Not... nothing..." Boundless Saint pretend laughing and said, "Well, Monarch, thanks, for what you have done for us today. It will be shameless not to present something as a return, although nothing is good enough... Hehehe... Well... If you won't turn it down... I will send two people to you in a few days..."

...

# Chapter 648: Get the Money!

---

"Send two people over? Your bastard sons? Are you not going to live new lives? Why don't you take them with you?" Ye Xiao was confused.

"No, no, no." Boundless Saint waved his hand. After thinking for a few seconds, he said, "Well... I urh... I have two girls. Hmm... They are good looking. I think you don't have enough women to serve you, Monarch. The two girls are daughters of my departed brothers. If they can follow on your sides, it should be their great fortune... What about..."

Boundless Saint was being so nice here. He truly was thinking about returning the favor for Feng Zhiling.

It was also surely a good thing for the two girls if they could stay with Feng Monarch. That would also be a great relief for Boundless Saint! It was much better for them to stay with Feng Zhiling than follow the bunch of assassins.

[Well... Feng Monarch is apparently good at taking care of girls. Look at that ugly woman. If she stays on my side and she played piteous to me from time to time, I am afraid I would have slapped the hell out of her to the sky. However, Feng Monarch actually treated her so well... I guess the two girls will have a very good treatment. You always need to compare before realizing something is better. I don't think my girls are worse than that ugly beast, no matter how special Feng Monarch is!]

[It would be injustice if they lose this!]

However, after he said it, that ugly beast in Feng Monarch's arms turned to him and stared at him.

She was furious!

She hated what he proposed. That was reasonable. However, what surprised him most was that after he was stared at for a few seconds, he felt himself frozen!

He even felt like his soul was getting off his body!

He couldn't even stay conscious!

The horrible feeling of despair scared him badly...

[What the hell is this?]

The next moment, Bing-Er scolded, "How can you be so annoying? You are humiliating me because I look ugly! Master, this is all your fault! Everybody thinks I am ugly now!"

Ye Xiao comforted her with words like 'you can't judge a book by its cover', 'you can't measure the water by baskets', 'you are the only woman in my heart', 'other women are all ugly monsters to me'... Anyway, he said all those kind of useless words!

Strangely, after Bing-Er talked to Ye Xiao, the depression and the feeling of despair on Boundless Saint disappeared...

Boundless Saint felt that his soul was back to his body. He was still scared after. Cold sweat was out on his back. He wiped the sweat on the forehead and said, "No, no no... My lady, you are not ugly at all. You are so beautiful, both appearance and your heart... Wonderful... Gorgeous! Really... Brilliant! Ahem... I was joking back there. It was just a joke. That is all. Hahaha..."

And he added, "Why would Feng Monarch want any other girl as he already has you! Other girls in the world are all normal and trite. They are never matches to you, my lady... Hahaha... I was just joking back then. Words slipped out. Please forgive me."

He was totally terrified. [Even a maid beside Feng Monarch is that powerful? She actually just literally stared the fucking soul out off my body? I nearly died there?!]

[I... I really talked recklessly... I should never mention any girls... If that woman raged up with anger on me, I guess she wouldn't need to ask Feng Monarch, Ning Biluo or Zhao Pingtian to get to me... She can wipe us all up by herself... Xiu of the Heavens and Wan of the Clouds are not much stronger than her... How would I say those stupid words at this important moment? That was so lucky she didn't want to kill me. Otherwise, I should have died here for the stupid words out of my mouth! Oh my heavens!]

Bing-Er's staring only attacked Boundless Saint. He was the only one who felt it. Nobody else knew it at all.

They saw Boundless Saint was scared by just some words of a little girl. They were just speechless.

Surely, it was easy to understand that Boundless Saint was being extremely polite to Feng Monarch's maid in Ling-Bao Hall. That was a bit too over, but it was reasonable!

However...

"I mean, brother, you are one of the top three assassins in the world. Please. How can you be so cowardly..." Zhao Pingtian couldn't bear seeing it. "Just for some money... Do you have to act so unbelievably humble? Look at you. Where is the Boundless Saint who stood there facing the sword attack alone?"

Even those golden label assassins couldn't endure it. [Is there anything wrong with Saint? Even though he fears Ling-Bao Hall and Feng Monarch, does he have to be so humble to a maid? Is it too humiliating?]

Of course, Boundless Saint didn't dare to tell them what just happened to him. He didn't dare to say he was threatened by that death stare! He wiped the sweat on the forehead and smiled. "I am just a bit lost, facing such an amount of money... It's normal... Normal... Hahaha..."

And then he glanced at Bing-Er, but only to find this ugly girl was looking back at him disdainfully. It was like an innocent girl looking at a coward or a terrible clown.

[Fine. I am a coward. I am a clown. Is it good now...] Boundless Saint tried to comfort himself. [I will get the money and get the hell away. I will never see this girl again... I can't mess with such a female monster... No wonder Master Bai recognizes Feng Monarch as his rival. Look at his maid. She explains a lot...]

While people were talking, the counting was finished and the number was correct.

In fact, the two golden label assassins didn't really count much of it. Wan Zhenghao and Liu Changjun did most of the work...

Because... When assassins counted, they were clumsy...

"Correct!"

"It's the right number! Not a dime less!"

Wan Zhenghao and Liu Changjun confirmed.

They got the money for their dream now. What was left was to spend it properly!

Boundless Saint took a long breath out. The thirteen assassins took a breath out with relief too.

[We have it now! All the money here!]

Boundless Saint felt that his blood was boiling up again, after being frozen by that horrible stare and the loss of blood earlier.

[Money!]

[All the... money! Ah!]

"Stop that! Take the four billion, each of you! Get it yourself first!"

...

# Chapter 649: I Am Taking It...

---

Boundless Saint took a deep breath, trying to suppress down his excitement. He looked extremely spirited when he talked. This moment, he had totally forgotten the fear for Bing-Er. He had lost lots of blood and should be weak at the moment, but he was so excited that he seemed totally fine!

Get the money!

Boundless Saint gave the order. The thirteen golden label assassins looked at each other, pushing each other like kids. They were obviously thirsty for it, but none of them dared to take the money first.

"Tiger, why don't you get it first. You were yelling that you would be the first! What? Are you afraid now?"

"I am a coward, so what? I was having an ill stomach..."

"So what? That should only make you feel weak on your legs. There is nothing to do about taking the money!"

"No... It is just... After I went to the toilet, I didn't wash my hands... I feel that it is much better if I will be the last one to take the money. It is the same, isn't it? Panther, you get it first..."

"Pah! Why did you push me? You didn't wash your hands and you pushed me with it? I am not in a hurry either. I guess Wolf

should take it first..."

"Come on, Snake, you first..."

"Oh shxt! No way... I am not..."

"Ohhh... You guys just go get it first..."

...

They kept pushing each other but nobody really touched the money.

They just stared at the money greedily. They could die for it, but none of them would take it first. They even made all kinds of excuses... Even something about washing hands after going to toilet...

"What the hell are you doing? Go get it!" Boundless Saint shouted.

"..." Thirteen assassins stared at the money, but none of them moved ahead.

They even kept stepping back...

They were even further to the money now...

"You first..."

"No, no... You first..."

"Come on... You should be first..."

"Wait... I need to rub my eyes to make sure I am not dreaming..."

"You didn't wash your hands after toilet... and you rub your eyes? That is disgusting. Go get the money, will you?"

"Come on. You can't rub your eyes, but you can get the money. Go!"

"Hurry... Go..."

"You go first!"

...

"What the fxck are you doing here? I said get the money! What is wrong with you?" The others all watched them push each other. Boundless Saint felt embarrassed and disgraced badly.

He was ashamed and angry. He shouted, "I am going to kill you bunch of bastards! God damn it! We killed, we fought, we got hurt,

we did everything for it! Weren't we risking our lives for it? For fxck's sake! You guys fought each other for just thousands taels! Now that is nearly one hundred billion waiting for you! What the hell! Are you telling me you are going to be decent gentlemen now? Fxck it! Stop fooling around! Are you going to take it or not? If not, I am going to take it all! I mean it! You know I can do it! You know I will! I am warning you!"

He shouted and shouted again furiously!

The assassins were turning red on their faces and necks because of the scolding. However, they did love money. Finally, one big tough guy walked out; he rubbed his hands with a red face and said, "Well... then... I... I... am going to... take it then?"

"Do it!" Boundless Saint showed a dark face.

"I am truly going to take it, ei?" The big guy made tiny steps getting closer to the money while rubbing his hands.

"Hurry you dxck head!" Boundless Saint raged up. "What the hell are you playing here! Cut the bullsh\*t!"

"Then... Then I will take it..." The big guy was still rubbing his hands. He could even puke out of greediness.

"Go get it! GET IT!!!!!" Boundless Saint was freaking out.

"Saint... I am really getting it then..." Big guy talked, but seemed

ready to back off. He acted like it was hell he was stepping over...

"You motherfxcker..." Boundless Saint finally couldn't bear it. He raged up with furies and jumped up and kicked on that big guy. He shouted, "Tiger Lei! I have never seen you being a coward like this before... You used to be so tough! Don't you dare humiliate me like this now! This is the day we change our fate! Can't you just show me some respect! You... kept asking and asking and asking... Are you kidding me? You think I am weak now so I can't take you down? You want to try?"

That was a furious kick. He suffered loss of blood earlier and didn't recover yet. Otherwise, that big guy should spit out blood because of it.

"Hahahaha..." All the others were laughing.

That was just hilarious.

That Tiger Lei was also laughing. He laughed even more happily than others. He said, "Then I will... I will just take it..."

Boundless Saint's face turned dark again. He was going to kick him hard again. The big guy was terrified, so he hurriedly got down to take the notes on the floor.

[Wait? He closed his eyes?]

Boundless Saint stepped over and grabbed Tiger Lei on the collar

and said, "What the hell are you doing? Can't you just stop acting weird? What is this again?"

Tiger Lei opened his eyes. He didn't look at Boundless Saint though. He stared at the money in his hands and quivered, "Money is still here? I can still touch it! It's real! I am not dreaming! This is not a dream!"

Boundless Saint loosened it. They all understood now. Tiger Lei had been worrying that this was just a dream, until he touched the money. He was so afraid, so he didn't want to stop the dream. While he touched the money, he closed his eyes. He thought that if it was a dream, closing his eyes could make the dream last longer!

In front of such a huge amount of money, everyone would act weird, not only Tiger Lei!

Tiger Lei finally made sure it was not a dream. This was a dream coming true. He did nothing but only focused on counting the notes!

The other twelve assassins were thrilled! They looked at him counting. They swallowed and sighed in their hearts. [Why didn't I go first? Why?]

Tiger Lei grabbed a bundle of notes and started counting. "One, two, three, four... Oh heavens! This is a ten thousand note... Ahhhh..."

His fingers were quivering. He was so thrilled that his face looked bleeding red. He licked his finger and counted, "... Seven, eight, nine, ten..." And then he licked his finger again and then continued. "... twenty-six, twenty-seven, twenty-eight..."

...

# Chapter 650: Ashamed

---

"Damn it..."

Boundless Saint felt extremely ashamed because of what his guy did. He stepped over and kicked on him. "What the hell are you doing... There are one hundred notes in one bundle. Every bundle is the same. Can't you just count it as a whole! It has been counted a few minutes ago... You ignorant prick..."

"Do you think Feng Monarch would take your money? Besides, you are a rich man now! Would you care about one or two notes in that bundle? Damn it... If you keep counting this way, it is going to cost you a whole life to finish!"

"What are you looking at? Why do you keep looking? I know you are illiterate!" Boundless Saint spat and sighed.

He felt extremely disgraced.

[Why are my men such a bunch of fools...]

"Urh..." Tiger Lei started to take the notes in bundles and murmured, "One, two, three, four... eleven, twelve, thirteen..."

His money was piling up high.

The others were looking at him and his growing money pile... [I

am going to have the same amount too...]

Others thought.

"... Wait...?" Tiger Lei suddenly looked up at others and rubbed his head. There was one bundle of notes in his hand and he asked, "Where is it I counted?"

That was so hilarious when he said it in such an innocent, ignorant, embarrassed, and gloomy way!

The others were all broken down!

The place was bursting with laughters.

Ye Xiao, Bing-Er, Ning Biluo, Zhao Pingtian, Wan Zhenghao... Everyone was down!

Bing-Er thought, [That is what an assassin is like! Interesting!]

Wan Zhenghao thought, [So this is what assassins look like? If I knew such a small amount of money could defeat an assassin so easily, why did I fear assassins? I could have solved the problems with money. My heavens, I have been scared for so many years! That is embarrassing!]

Ning Biluo thought, [This can't be assassins of Boundless Lake. They kept chasing me down for such a long time! That is humiliating!]

Zhao Pingtian thought, [What the hell! He is an assassin? Where is my sword. Give me my sword and I am going to chop his head off... He is disgracing us all... No, not a sword. I should use a knife... That would be a pleasure to do it...]

Liu Changjun thought, [Well, forget it. He is a rich man now. He is no longer an assassin. That makes sense. He should be a fool...]

The other golden label assassins thought, [God damn it. Who is Tiger Lei? We don't know him. We never do. That is so...]

Boundless Saint's face turned dark. He looked like willing to swallow someone. "I... I... I am going to... You shameless prick... I.... You... I am going to spit out blood..."

[This is so disgraceful!]

[In such an important situation! Being watched by so many people!]

[You are going to be a billionaire! Can't you just be decent?]

Tiger Lei blinked and blinked. He was so sad. "Saint, please don't look at me like that... I... Ah... I can't read... You know it! I... How can I count such a huge amount of money... I... I didn't mean it..."

Boundless Saint rolled up his eyes and sighed. He didn't say anything but only gasped...

He really didn't know what to say now.

Wan Zhenghao stepped over and said, "I mean... You can't just stop there. Look. It is a bit difficult for you to count it yourselves. How about this. I will let my men count it for you... It should be much faster. How about it?"

"Great! Thanks, Boss Wan! You are a generous man!" Boundless Saint bowed with gratitude. He turned to the thirteen assassins and fiercely spoke, "I see. You are never useful in decent scenes! Rotten meat should never be on a decent table! When people treat you as men, you crow in the donkey shed and even yell like donkeys... When people don't treat you as men, you get mad and raise a fight... I... Why did I end up with such a bunch of stupid brothers... I will be damned..."

"I always get pissed off by these pricks. My heavens, this must be my punishment. I recruited them myself... That was my fault..."

Boundless Saint kept sighing. He sounded so sorrowful.

The next moment, some accountants came out from the countinghouse. They were terrified by the assassins.

None of them had experienced such thing!

These assassins were all the top range assassins in the world!

Each of them was remarkable figure in the martial world...

To do the counting under the watch of this bunch of guys... That was extremely difficult for these accountants...

Wan Zhenghao looked at the terrified accountants. He was angry too. Boundless Saint's men were being fools, but it was reasonable. They had never seen such a huge amount of money and they couldn't count it. That was not a big problem. However, the accountants were scared. How could they work with such condition?

Wan Zhenghao shouted, "What is wrong with you? You are accountants! You are accountants of Ling-Bao Hall! Assassins have never seen that much money. Don't tell me you are the same! Look at your coward faces! Can't you just be professional? Where do you put your responsibility? Go do it! Quick! Do a great job for me!"

The accountants looked at Boss Wan. They couldn't believe it. [What the hell? What is this? Others don't know, but we do! You, Wan Zhenghao, is afraid of assassins the most! These are all superior assassins in the world here! How come you don't feel scared at all?]

[This is insane! This is not right! Fine. Even Boss Wan doesn't fear them, why should we? It is just counting some notes. Let's do it!]

When they finished counting four billion for each of the thirteen assassins, they were all sweating and exhausted already...

They nearly fell down the floor.

They said they wouldn't be scared, but how could they not be? Over a dozen superior assassins stared at them. That scared the shxt out of them!

They knew the assassins would never dare to touch them, not to mention the assassins weren't staring at them but the money. Still, they felt terrified!

Four billion in each space ring.

Space ring was rare and priceless in Land of Han-Yang. However, after Ye Xiao broke through Sky Origin Stage, space ring was easy to get!

To make a space ring was simply to squeeze the space into a small size and permanently seal it on an object like a ring, a bracelet, a necklace, or a waistband. As long as he was in Sky Origin Stage, he could use Space Power. People in Land of Han-Yang didn't know about it thoroughly. Even though they knew, they couldn't use it properly. However, Ye Xiao was once a Dao Origin Stage cultivator. He surely was skillful of using Space Power!

The space ring Ye Xiao could make always only had a small space. That was unchangeable for now. The size of the space depended on the real cultivation level. Ye Xiao was in the top levels of Sky Origin Stage. What he could make was about one hundred square meters. That was rather small.

...

# Chapter 651: Quit the Martial World

---

The space ring Ye Xiao made was stable. It was much stabler than other space rings in this world. The space ring wouldn't really last forever. Usually, it lasted only three hundred to five hundred years. Ye Xiao's space ring could last one thousand to two thousand years!

He could make it himself, that was why he casually gave over a dozen space rings out to Boundless Saint folks!

However, it was still some rare and priceless treasure. Not long before when Ye Xiao gave a space ring to the king, Chen Xuantian, the King was surprised!

Ye Xiao's space ring was surely not as good as the ones from Wan-Er and Xiu-Er. Their space rings were truly treasures. The space was huge and it was even stabler. When Ye Xiao returned to Qing-Yun Realm, if he was short for money, one of the space rings Wan-er and Xiu-Er gave him could solve his problem!

The thirteen assassins got the space rings and their money. They were all quivering.

[Oh heavens!]

[I am a rich man now... Oooo...]

They usually spat at the rich guys when they were on the street

and they would say, 'Dumbass! Money is all you got! Do you think you are any better? If anybody give me an offer for your head, I will take it right away! Money means nothing, you asshole...'

However...

Now they only felt, [Oh heavens... It is so nice to be rich! So good! Money is everything!]

No matter where they went, they could tell everybody, 'I am rich! What?'

[Oh my dream...]

[It came true!]

Boundless Saint took over the eighteen billion and put it away. And then he put the rest into a space ring.

"Alright. There is a long life ahead of us to enjoy. Now, we should go get things done. Let's give the money to our departed brothers' families!"

Boundless Saint was laughing.

The assassins didn't leave right away. They had too much money with them, that was why they became cowards. [What if we got robbed? We can't just go out like this. I think it is better for Ling-

Bao Hall to send somebody to escort us!]

They seemed to depend on Ling-Bao Hall now.

Ning Biluo couldn't bear it anymore. "God damn it. Who dares to rob you guys while you stay together? Who has the capability to? People will feel lucky that you don't rob them instead... Now you are worrying about being robbed? I... That is..."

Boundless Saint was solemn. "Well now everything is different! We were poor... So we robbed... Now we are rich! We are rich men! Why shouldn't we be careful? Besides, the world isn't really that peaceful like it looks..."

Wan Zhenghao couldn't hear it anymore. He swayed the sleeve and left. He felt angry, [God damn it. These are assassins? Top assassins? The world isn't peaceful because of you! Now you are telling me you are afraid... I have been rich for such a long time. Have I ever been that scared?]

[I am no longer scared now. Assassins are just like that... What to be afraid of... I truly despise you! Assassins? You guys?]

[Pah!]

...

Even though they were disposed, they still stayed in Ling-Bao Hall till it was late at night. The fourteen top assassins in the

world, including Boundless Saint, disguised themselves and sneakily walked out the back door of Ling-Bao Hall. Ye Xiao and Ning Biluo both sighed when they saw it.

At this moment, they truly felt that...

Sometimes, it was difficult to describe it thoroughly.

Was martial world the only world for them?

What should men live for?

For money?

Nobody asked the question.

However, they all had complicated emotions.

Was it for their families? For better life?

Right!

How to live a better life then?

Strength?

Partly!

Not only strength, but also money!

Why was it still money?

They all knew money was important. Truth was in front of everybody, however, they just couldn't accept it happily...

There was one thing they could be certain about.

From now on, there would never be Boundless Lake in the world. There was no Boundless Saint ever!

The most horrible assassination group quit the martial world for real!

...

"I am happy for them. For what they get as an end. However, I am also sad about it." Ning Biluo sighed. "Finally, some assassin can live the life we all dream of now... They can finally quit the martial world. Even Boundless Saint can quit the martial world and go on with a happy and peaceful life."

"What makes me sad is that... even Boundless Saint, such a powerful figure, has to be so cautious and cowardly when he decided to quit, as if he was a thief... He was so scared and he even

needed you to help him when he made the decision."

"The path of assassins is truly rough, both the process and the destination." Ning Biluo sighed.

Zhao Pingtian asked, "I mean, Old Ning, you... You really just dropped it off? Just let it go? Let him go?"

Ning Biluo bitterly smiled. "How could I? You don't know. I didn't have confidence on that sword strike. I was not sure he would survive or not. You know, a slight move would kill him. I can strike the sword accurately, but I am not sure if he can stand still. You know what was dangerous for him now?"

"If he hesitated even a bit, even if he just moved backward a little bit, he would die. However, he accepted my attack all along. He didn't back off at all. He truly was going to die for it."

"I played a game, and he won. One sword strike ends it all. I forgive him! What he has done on me doesn't make him different from you and I. He was just being excessive. If I were him, I might do the same thing. Besides, I can see he truly doesn't want to be an assassin anymore... Now that he gets enough money to quit... he is like my departed brothers... Sometimes, they look at me and ask, 'when can we put down the sword and go to the mountains and live the peaceful life we want'..."

"We are just the same. He decided to quit and he was going to quit. I don't have to push him to death. Why not just give him a chance to move on..." Ning Biluo sorrowfully spoke.

...

# Chapter 652: Preparation

---

Ye Xiao watched the fourteen of them leave and then asked the others, "What about you guys?"

Ning Biluo, Liu Changjun and Zhao Pingtian were all surprised. "What about us?"

"You are the same! If you want to live the life they dream of..." Ye Xiao spoke in a low voice, "I can give you more money than they have. You won't feel any stress... You will have families, children, and a happy and fulfilling life."

The three of them blanched out.

Ning Biluo bitterly smiled. Zhao Pingtian was the same. Liu Changjun giggled.

Ning Biluo said, "To be honest, if you tell me this one month ago, I will be thrilled! I may just quit the martial world right away! To quit this... is always assassins' dream!"

"People all know assassins kill for money, that we are cruel and merciless. Assassins are a bunch of butchers who kill for their own interests... Well they are not wrong about it."

"However, most assassins are forced by the cruel reality... It is not a decent job. Many assassins would do anything to get money. There is no price in our world..."

"But if you give them a chance to quit... none of them would refuse it. Nobody wants to put one's life in risk forever."

"Me too. I wanted to quit this so eagerly. I wanted to make enough money as soon as I could. I needed money that was enough for me to spend for the rest of my life and to take care of the people I have to look after. I would quit as long as I got the money. No hesitation. However, it was close to impossible to make that much money. Even if I am one of the top assassins in the world, it is still too difficult to achieve that goal."

"In fact, if I truly have done it and started to live a peaceful life in a countryside, that would be wonderful. At least I thought so one month ago."

Ning Biluo's eyes lit up as he said, "But... our sight is always limited. I couldn't see the possibility of going up to heavens. I didn't even know about it. That was why my view was limited in this world."

"However, since you gave me that sword art and the cultivation method, I realized that this world was not everything. The future was big and broad in front of me. I have something I want to fight for now. Why would I quit?"

"I have the chance to become a god, then I will do whatever I can to become one. I want to be a master martial artist now that I don't need to worry all those in this world."

"Why not just go after a bigger dream? I think most of the cultivators would make the same choice as I do." Ning Biluo took in a deep breath, lowered his head, looked at his hands and said, "I have learned what you taught me now, Monarch. The sword strike I made earlier today can prove it... I can feel that the gate to the upper realm is in front of me. As long as I work harder to step ahead, I can enter it."

"I am still holding myself here, because I am waiting."

His eyes were filled with emotions. "I am waiting for the day when we rise together!"

Zhao Pingtian nodded, "I am exactly the same with Ning. I have never thought about quitting. Never..." He looked aside and smiled gently as he said, "I want to rush up to the upper realm, to find a way to bring Rou-Er back. I want to marry Rou-Er. I want to be a real couple with her. I have to continuously improve myself..."

"I don't want to stop. I want to be better and better!"

"The better I am in cultivation, the greater I will achieve, and the longer time I have to stay with Rou-Er!" Zhao Pingtian seriously spoke, "Even if I am going to be god, I don't want to be a normal god. I want to be... a god like Master Bai!"

"A god like Master Bai..." Ye Xiao bitterly smiled.

That was absolutely a high standard!

Master Bai was beyond the limitation of Lang of Han-Yang and also Qing-Yun Realm. He was a superior figure even in Human Realm Upon Heavens. If not that Ye Xiao had Boundless Space and East-rising Purple Qi, he really didn't think he could become as powerful as Master Bai one day, although he hated to think this way. It was even so difficult for Ye Xiao. Zhao Pingtian's dream was truly difficult to come true!

Ye Xiao was lost in thoughts. He couldn't say it. The others might not be able to realize the truth even after he told it. If he told them, it would only break Zhao Pingtian's confidence. He decided to keep it in mind. He looked to Liu Changjun and asked, "What about you?"

Liu Changjun stood chest out and decisively spoke, "What I want is simple and pure. I just want to go wherever you go, Master. I am happy to be your assassin and do the dirty jobs for you. I hope no matter where you go, you will take me with you!"

Ye Xiao focused his gaze. It sounded like Liu Changjun was not as ambitious as Zhao Pingtian and Ning Biluo, but in fact, Ye Xiao knew that Liu Changjun was the most ambitious one among the three!

Zhao Pingtian wanted to be equally powerful as Master Bai, but it was still not as ambitious as Liu Changjun. Without Boundless Space and East-rising Purple Qi, maybe Ye Xiao could never be as powerful as Master Bai. However, the truth was that he would catch up with Master Bai one day sooner or later and even become stronger. If Liu Changjun kept staying with Ye Xiao all the time, he

should be even more powerful than Zhao Pingtian and Ning Biluo one day!

"So you want to follow my steps ahead?" Ye Xiao smiled. "Good. I will give you the chance... But you just have to catch up."

When Ye Xiao heard Ning Biluo said that he could get up to the upper realm by only one step, it reminded him what Master Bai told him before he left. The tunnel would be sealed half a year later!

Master Bai was telling the truth. Ye Xiao had to go to Qing-Yun Realm in half a year.

Ye Nantian and Song Jue were totally capable to rise.

What about Bing-Er?

Bing-Er was an unbelievable talented monster. She improved so fast that nobody would believe it. However, it was still not easy for her to improve to such level!

Moreover...

"Liu Changjun, what level are you at now?" Ye Xiao frowned and asked, "What level of Sky Origin Stage?"

...

# Chapter 653: Different People Have Different Aspirations

---

When Liu Changjun heard Ye Xiao, he proudly answered, "Master, under your supervision, I have reached level seven of Sky Origin Stage earlier. After you gave me that martial art, I suddenly got new inspiration. Now I am at middle of level nine already! It was hard to imagine that I could boost up like this! It is you who made me who I am, Master."

Liu Changjun was satisfied with his cultivation achievement and also grateful to Ye Xiao.

He knew that he could never reach such height without Ye Xiao's help!

Ye Xiao nodded and frowned. "Good, but not enough! Too slow!"

"Not enough?" Not only Liu Changjun, even Ning Biluo and Zhao Pingtian were surprised.

[It has been just a short time. That is a great improvement! And we are talking about upgrading in Sky Origin Stage! The middle of level nine is almost the top of Sky Origin Stage! That is not enough? Too slow? What is enough then? What is not slow?]

Ning, Zhao and Liu all thought that maybe Ye Xiao was too critical!

"This is not enough. I will give you three months. You have to improve yourself to the level that you can break up to the upper realm in three months!" Ye Xiao blandly spoke, "Do not be surprised. I am telling you. In three months, if you fail, you are never going to have any chance this life!"

[Not going to have any chance this life?]

Liu Changjun's entire face turned gloomy.

Now, Ning Biluo and Zhao Pingtian thought he was not only too critical, but also exaggerating. However, Liu Changjun had an instinct that Ye Xiao was telling the truth. That was the truth!

That meant he only had three months left now!

"Don't worry, Master. I will reach that height within three months! I would rather die cultivating than give up on it." Liu Changjun was solemn.

"Hmm." Ye Xiao took out several dan beads and gave two to each of them. He said, "Ning and Zhao, the dan beads for you will stabilize your current spiritual power and gather more qi for you, so that you can be ready to rush up... Liu Changjun, the dan beads for you will improve your cultivation capability. I guess it is too pushing to urge you to improve that much within three months. I really don't want to help you with my dan beads. It is not the best way to improve. You will have hidden troubles because of it. However, time is passing. We need to sort out the primary. You take the dan beads later and digest them as soon as possible. Just

keep rushing!"

The three of them answered. Apparently, they knew Ye Xiao wasn't doing this for nothing. There must be something wrong.

The next moment, Ye Xiao snapped his finger. Three dan beads rapidly shot off his hand.

They went pass Zhao Pingtian but then disappeared.

"Lady Rou-Er has improved a lot. I guess you don't need me to keep stabilizing your soul now?" Ye Xiao smiled. He looked at Zhao Pingtian.

Zhao Pingtian was grateful. He grinned and said, "I have seen her... but her soul is weak. She needs to thrill up badly so as to show up for a while... Well, that is such a great progress already. Thanks to the supreme dan beads, Master!"

"Don't worry. When we go to Qing-Yun Realm, there will be more methods to help her." Ye Xiao said, "Oh right. Ning, you should go back to your place and make the arrangements you need to. When you are back, it is time for us to rush up. There is not much time for us to waste."

Ning Biluo answered, "Yes!"

"Anything you guys need to take care of, go do it as soon as you can," Ye Xiao said.

And then he held Bing-Er's hand and walked out.

Ning Biluo and the others all felt that Ye Xiao wasn't quite happy...

Ye Xiao was frowning, lost in thoughts.

The only problem was Bing-Er. It was the biggest problem.

She had improved greatly. She was already at level seven of Earth Origin Stage. However, it was such a long distance to level nine of Sky Origin Stage! It was close to impossible!

It would take a long time. Even if Ye Xiao used all the dan beads he could to help, it wouldn't work!

Some special dan beads could improve one's cultivation. It would work even better if they were in supreme level. However, cultivation level was not the only thing that was required to break up to the upper realm. She needed combat experience and mind power enhancement.

It was unrealistic to make Bing-Er improve to the realm-breaking level within a short time!

What to do then?

Master Bai said there was only six months left. That must be true. Otherwise, he wouldn't suddenly ask Ye Xiao to make him fifty Heaven Seizing Supreme Dan beads. That was impossible at that time. It must be real that the tunnel would be sealed after six months. If Bing-Er failed to rise up with them, she and Ye Xiao would never be able to meet again!

Ye Xiao frowned. He was utterly confused. He was blank.

[Should I leave her alone here? No! How can I be relieved? How can I leave her?]

[But...]

At this moment, Wan Zhenghao walked in surprisingly, "Monarch."

"What is it?" Ye Xiao said gloomily.

"The reward warrants are almost done..." Wan Zhenghao looked at his face and cautiously said, "The money we have is running out. If Ning Biluo and Zhao Pingtian didn't kill some on that list, we should be out of money long ago..."

Apparently, Boss Wan wanted to make so money again.

"Hmm. Ok. Go send out the message. Ling-Bao Hall's second auction will begin in half a month!" Ye Xiao made the decision.

"Yes. Great!" Wan Zhenghao was thrilled.

"Hmm... Wait." Ye Xiao stopped Wan Zhenghao when he was leaving, "Wan, tell me one thing. If I go, will you come with me? Well. What is your plan for the future?"

"Go? Go where?" Wan Zhenghao was confused.

"The upper realm." Ye Xiao pointed up.

Wan Zhenghao was suddenly upset. He looked at Ye Xiao and said, "Monarch... I... I can't... I am too weak. And I am too fat... And... And... I... I am afraid..."

"I see." Ye Xiao totally knew Wan Zhenghao's thought now.

He didn't want to leave.

All Wan Zhenghao wanted was only wealth in the mortal world.

...

# Chapter 654: Pull up a Seedling to Help It Grow

---

"Hmm. When I go, I will leave you some supreme dan beads for sale. Also Slimming Dan and Life Extending Dan... Hmm. I will give it to you before I leave and check how it works on your body..."

Ye Xiao said, "By the way, Wan, remember one thing."

Wan Zhenghao was solemn. "Please, Monarch. I will never forget your words!"

"Do not darken your conscience ever!" Ye Xiao looked at Wan Zhenghao. "Remember this. I may return to see you again in the future."

Wan Zhenghao nodded heavily as a promise.

In fact, it became his motto. He remembered it, followed it and got benefit from it all his life!

...

Things were all settled in Ling-Bao Hall. Ye Xiao took Bing-Er's hand and walked out Ling-Bao Hall.

He was still restless!

All things were well arranged. What about Bing-Er?

That was the only thing that caused him a headache.

Bing-Er followed him. She knew her master was thinking about something. He was anxious. She didn't dare to disturb him. She just stayed with him while walking on the street.

Ye Xiao thought for a long time but couldn't think of anything practical. He took a deep breath and made up his mind. He said, "Bing-er, come with me."

"Where are we going?" Bing-Er asked.

"Hmm. Let's go... out of the city." Ye Xiao took a deep breath. He decided to take a risk.

What he was thinking now was the snow mountain he created earlier.

Stories happened in that mountain. Gu Jinlong died there. The other girl, Su Yeyue, was attacked there. Because of that, she got the opportunity to become a disciple of a grand master. Now, Ye Xiao decided to go to this mountain again!

He wanted to solve this unsolvable problem there!

The place he wanted to go was the extremely spacious ice cave.

What he wanted to do was to clean that cave, expand the cave, deepen it, and set an eternal Spirit Gathering Array.

He wanted Bing-Er to cultivate in there.

At the same time, he would feed her all kinds of supreme dan beads, so as to boost her up forcibly!

It might be pulling a seedling to make it grow, but time wouldn't wait. He had to do this.

As long as the cultivation was up to a certain level, he could feed her Nine Turns Heart Dan to push her up to the top level!

He could keep feeding her Nine Turns Heart Dan beads one after another...

All in all, he would rather use up all he had and do all he could to make her up!

He could remake all the things when they were in Qing-Yun Realm after all.

However, it couldn't be done in the city. It was too noisy, and it was easy to be interrupted. If Bing-Er was interrupted at any important moment, she might be ruined for her entire life.

That ice cave Gu Jinlong died in was covert and spacious. It was a perfect location!

Time flew by and he started without any hesitation.

He grabbed Bing-Er's hand and got two horses. They rode the horses to the South Gate. When Monarch of Ling-Bao Hall wanted to get out the city, nobody would stop him. The guards didn't even ask about it. When Feng Monarch was till dozens meters away from the gate, the guards opened the gate quickly already.

Ye Xiao thanked them and then left the town fast.

...

On the ice mountain.

Ye Xiao was much stronger than the last time he was in the this ice mountain. He spent a long time to settle everything...

They were in the mountain now.

The cave was three times bigger than before. Ye Xiao searched the array method in his memory and started building the array concentratedly.

"Bing-Er, when I tell you to sit here, you sit here. Think about

nothing else. Only focus on cultivating. Don't move. Take these two dan beads before you sit down and then start to digest them..." Ye Xiao said, "I will be here to protect you. Just try to boost yourself up as much as you can. It's important. Please focus!"

And then Bing-Er sat on where Ye Xiao pointed to.

Ye Xiao had used three hundred pieces of spiritual stones to build a lotus platform.

"Why in such a hurry, Master?" Bing-Er was so curious, so she asked.

"I have to..." Ye Xiao was busy setting things up. "There is not much time left for us. We have more than half a year..." While he was talking, he didn't stop setting up things around. Soon, the array was ready.

Time flew by and two days had passed.

Ye Xiao sat on the top of the mountain, looking at every movement within ten miles. Even birds couldn't fly across this area.

Bing-Er was in a very important moment to break into level nine of Earth Origin Stage!

As long as she broke through it, she would be a Sky Origin Stage cultivator!

Bing-Er's progress surprised Ye Xiao and also spirited him up. Ye Xiao saw hope in her amazing progress.

He might feel risky to do this earlier. It might be pulling a seedling to help it grow and might hurt Bing-Er, however, with the dan beads and the array's power, she broke through two levels within two days. It made Ye Xiao realize it wasn't impossible to reach the top of Sky Origin Stage within half a year.

Ye Xiao was full of vigor now...

Within the two days, he spent a short time to go back home once. He told Song Jue that he was helping Bing-Er in cultivation and he wouldn't go home for a few days. He didn't want to be interrupted and Song Jue should not be worry or to try to find him...

Song Jue felt strange about it, but he didn't think any deeper about it.

Cultivators always needed special environment and strict conditions to break through certain levels, especially high levels.

He just gave Ye Xiao some advices and then let him go.

"If anything goes wrong, come home immediately!" Song Jue said.

He didn't worry about the cultivation though. [He cured my disease... No matter what happens in cultivation, he can handle it for sure.]

It was rather difficult to find a person in the Land of Han-Yang who could threaten Ye Xiao's life... as he was extremely powerful at the moment...

Master Bai was gone. There was no more House of the Chaotic Storms. Boundless Saint quit the martial art with his assassins...

Steward Song would never worry about Ye Xiao's safety now.

In Song Jue's opinion, it would be great that Ye Xiao wouldn't go mess with people forwardly...

Time was passing...

...

During this time...

Reports from north battle had arrived in Chen-Xing City, even though Ye Nantian had been trying to cover it!

In fact, Ye Nantian knew what would happen if this report went back to the capital! He knew those pedantic and stupid officials would accuse him for the extinction. They would stop him from

‘immorally’ wiping out the grassland folks.

That was why he kept holding the report until now.

Right before he had successfully done it, he sent the report.

As expected, a huge disturbance was taking place in the capital!

...

# Chapter 655: Lots of Impeachments

---

‘... One fight, we slaughtered over one million grassland folks. None of them survived. Now we are marching into the wild grassland and aiming straight at their headquarters. We will certainly wipe out the grassland wolves and rule the north. As their nest is broken, none of them will live. There will be no more troubles in the north for the great Kingdom of Chen. From now on, the grassland...’

This report caused the boiling disturbance in the court at once.

"Ye Nantian is a cold-blooded butcher! Grassland folks are recusant and brutal indeed, but what about the children and women? The innocent kids? The old and the weak? How could he do that! Lunatic! What a bloody butcher!"

"Ye Nantian ignores the king because he holds the army. He kills as he wishes. He has lost his humanity! I am protesting against that Ye Nantian! For committing such unforgivable crime!"

"He didn't even report to the court before he did it! How inordinate and unruly! I protest against Ye Nantian for being arrogant to the King and the court!"

"It is a great thing to win the war, but to wipe out one race is against the heaven's nature! Your majesty, Ye Nantian is pushing the kingdom to the opposite side of other kingdoms! We will become enemy to the entire world. He is devious..."

"If we conquer the grassland folk and make Grassland Wolves our dependency, they will pay a tribute to us every year and accept our education. Isn't that a better solution? It strikes out our authority to the world. Ye Nantian is cutting off the future that we rule the north peacefully... It is a broad land in the north... A beautiful grassland... Such a waste to keep it deserted!"

"Your majesty... Ye Nantian..."

"Your majesty! Ye Nantian should be punished for that, so as to assuage popular indignation! To hold justice! Please, my king, make the decision and punish him!"

"Punish him, your majesty! We are begging!"

The officials kneeled down in the court, all tearing out, like they were bemoaning the state of the universe and pitying the fate of humankind, like they were some saints.

However, three of them were still standing straight up, without saying anything.

They were Prime Minister Zuo and two other old officials.

The three of them were all so old that their beards were all white. They were showing the same look, acting like they were asleep because they were old and easy to get tired. They acted like they didn't know what was going on at all.

In fact, they were all sneering in their minds.

[What a bunch of fools!]

[I don't care if Ye Nantian's method is wrong or what. Ye Nantian, even his name is enough to make him right! Who is Ye Nantian? Punish him? The king would never do that.]

[You bunch of morons truly have been promoted too fast. You know completely nothing. You don't even know the firmament is round and the rocks are hard...]

[Impeach Ye Nantian? That won't work and it will only bring you humiliations...]

[Think deeper. Ye Nantian has always wanted to leave. He just never has a chance. Now you guys are impeaching him here... Is it Ye Nantian's plan? If it is, that is such a brilliant scheme. One stone hits three birds. However, our king has been trying so hard to keep him here. You bunch of stupid men are trying to kick Ye Nantian out so badly... That is so stupid to break down our tower of strength...]

The three old men looked at each other sneakily and they knew what the other two were thinking. They just felt gloating. However, they still looked like they couldn't hear anything.

The king was showing a dark face while holding the war report. He looked at the officials kneeling on the court. Suddenly, he felt

furious.

[We made a deal. I saved his son and he should guard my north for twenty years.]

[It hasn't been twenty years yet, but the enemies in the north are all wiped out. Not to mention twenty years, in two hundred years, even two thousand years, there will be no enemies in the north.]

[In other words, he has done what he promised in advance.]

[He will leave at anytime!]

[He doesn't need these guys' impeachment to leave at all.]

[And yet these fools are still doing this here, asking me to punish him...]

[So this is the ignorance of fools?]

[Woeful! Pathetic!]

The king sighed and then closed the eyes. He was deep in thoughts. [The Grassland Wolves threatened my kingdom and put the entire Land of Han-Yang in danger. Even if we can defeat them and make them dependent on us, once they grow stronger, they will rise up with rebellion! Those wolves can never be tamed. Education is meaningless! These men in the court should all know

about it.]

[If the women and children were spared, twenty years later, there will be new grassland tribes... And they will keep coming to attack... These bloody officials all know it!]

[But they just have to use this to impeach Ye Nantian. They don't care about the extinction of those grassland folks or their women and children... They just can't let Ye Nantian keep being like this. They don't want the other kingdoms in the world treat their generals like us... They are afraid that scholars will get to lower and lower positions in the world...]

[They know it is right to wipe out the Grassland Wolves, but they still want to hold onto morality to impeach Ye Nantian! They don't simply want to put down Ye Nantian, they want to make an influence in the kingdom's affairs.]

[They are gathering all the scholars' power to affect my will.]

[They want higher position in the kingdom. They are not doing this because of Ye Nantian. They are doing this to me, the king.]

[Ye Nantian is an excuse.]

[Do you know how powerful Ye Nantian really is? He is a great figure who has been beyond the limit of this world long ago. Now you want to restrain him with the rule here. Do you know how stupid it is! Woeful! Pathetic!]

The king understood everything. He sighed heavily and opened his eyes slowly. Looking at the officials on the floor, he felt helpless.

For the first time, since Feng Zhiling gave him that dan bead and extended his life, he sighed!

How many people are with those officials?

Most of the ones who didn't follow those scholars in the court were generals. However, there were only a little generals in the kingdom.

Now that the kingdom was in danger, the generals who had the power to talk in the court were all in the front line. The rest of them couldn't fight against the group of scholars. They didn't even have the right to speak.

The kingdom needed military officers to fight the war, but it also needed these scholars to rule the kingdom!

Scholars and generals were in opposite positions but cooperate with each other. However, in the court, the scholars always outwit the generals!

"Prime Minister Zuo, what is your thought on this?" the king tiredly asked.

...

# Chapter 656: Merits and Demerits; Wuji's First Show

---

Prime Minister Zuo was closing his eyes. He didn't want to mess with anybody. [I don't want to mess with the king, nor do I want to mess with Ye Nantian. I certainly won't mess with the scholars group. One mistake and I will offend them all... The best option is to play a fool...]

At this moment, he heard the king.

He quivered.

[God damn it! Why me again? Was I born to be framed or something? Why is it so difficult to keep myself out of shxts?]

All the officials and the king were staring at him right now.

He looked extremely terrible at the moment.

The king asked him, so he had to answer. He had to choose a side now. If he tried to talk vaguely, he would offend them all. What would he choose then?

If he chose to support Ye Nantian and the king, he was against the scholar group. The other way around he would offend the king.

[What should I do?]

[I can't do that and not this either!]

However, he is the prime minister, the head of the scholar officials. He rolled his eyes and came up with an idea. He said, "It is a great merit that Great General Ye conquered the north! I think he should be rewarded. He should be rewarded amply!"

The officials looked at him with fierce eyes. They wished they could swallow this old bastard.

[You old thing. Are you a scholar or not? You are the head of us! What the hell do you think you are doing? You are breaking down our own prestige!]

The king smiled. "Oh?"

Prime Minister Zuo hurriedly continued, "However, there must be like billions people died in this fight... He did kill too much. That is immoral. That is a sin. He should be punished for it. He should be punished heavily..."

The king was shocked.

The officials were all stunned.

[What the hell is this?]

[You said he should be rewarded and yet you said he should be punished!]

[What do you suggest for real?]

[Which side do you choose? If you chose both sides, you are offending both sides!]

The king half closed his eyes and said, "So what do you think we should do to him? Should I reward him or punish him?"

Prime Minister Zuo bowed humbly and said, "I don't have other opinions. However, General Ye is both meritorious and reprehensible. That is the truth... It is your call to make whether we should reward him or punish him, your majesty!"

The king's face twisted.

[You old bastard. You spoke nothing at all.]

[You just beat around the bush and pushed it back to me.]

[What a wise move. Now you haven't offended either side of them, and still stood straight up right in the middle!]

"Your majesty, you are wise and brilliant. There is no better king in the history! ..." Prime Minister Zuo sucked up to the king with a

long speech... At last he said, "Such difficult problem about General Ye, I think only you can make the perfect decision. We should only wait for your words..."

The officials suddenly admired this old man so much!

What is the most important thing to be in the court?

That is it!

That is the art of language!

A difficult situation was perfectly solved by just a few words. He didn't mess with anybody, and got rid of any responsibility.

That was the lesson everybody should learn...

The officials decided to learn more from it.

The king's mouth twisted as he stared at Prime Minister Zuo.

The old man lowered his head and didn't look at the king. He decided not to look at him.

"Reconsider it! Off the court!"

The king waved his sleeve and left.

Prime Minister Zuo took a breath of relief.

What happened next? The king didn't go on court for a few days and nobody was in a hurry

[You are going to get up on the court sooner or later...]

[Like Prime Minister Zuo said, we should just wait for your words.]

[We can just object if your decision doesn't satisfy us.]

This night, when Prime Minister Zuo got home, he talked to Zuo Wuji, who was reading in the study room. "Wuji, didn't you say you want to become an official as soon as possible? There is a god-given opportunity. Maybe it is time you get in the court this time..."

Zuo Wuji's eyes lit up.

After his grandpa told him everything, he thought for a while and then said, "Grandpa, what do you think I should do?"

"What do you want to do?" Prime Minister Zuo asked.

"I want to..." Zuo Wuji hesitated.

"Go ahead." Prime Minister Zuo encouraged him.

"I want to write a report to the king. I think he should give the man freedom when the kingdom is in peace, so that they can still be like brothers to each other. Let him leave and wait for his return. End the disturbance and there will be only peace," Zuo Wuji slowly spoke.

Prime Minister Zuo's eyes lit up. His white beard rose up as he said, "Great! Great! Great!"

He spoke 'great' three times. He stood up and said, "Excellent! House of Zuo has a gifted child eventually!"

The next day.

The king finally got on court.

He felt extremely fidgety facing the officials, but there was nothing he could do. They had a strong point after all. Their reasons were moral and sacred. Even a king couldn't deny it.

He had no other choice but push Prime Minister Zuo out to help.

Apparently, he was not only the head of the scholar officials, but also the lubricant between the king and the officials!

Prime Minister Zuo looked bitter and he said, "I truly don't know what to do about General Ye. However, last night, my grandson heard about it and wrote a sealed report to you, your majesty. He asked me to bring it here. Please. He may be silly, but there may be something useful in his limited view."

And then he took out an envelope that was sealed with wax print and handed it up to the throne.

The king frowned and said, "Bring it over."

The servant took it and gave it to the king. The king looked at Prime Minister Zuo and then opened the envelope.

The moment he read it, his eyes lit up!

He finished reading the report and then thought for a while. He spoke in a low voice, "Prime Minister Zuo, is this truly Wuji's words?"

Prime Minister Zuo, "Yes."

"Do you know what he wrote?" the king blandly asked.

"Well... He did have a conversation with me, but I don't think I said anything in the report." Prime Minister Zuo bowed and said, "One should recommend those holy and good people including relatives. I think..."

"Hmm. I get it." The King nodded and said, "Imperial decree!"

An official stepped immediately out and the servants prepared the paper and brush pen at once.

...

# Chapter 657: There Is No Story without Coincidences

---

The king half closed the eyes and said, "We reward the one who contributes and punish the one who blunders. Let's wait till General Ye returns."

And then he said, "One more, Zuo Wuji is young and talented. Send him in to royal house as a study companion. Give him the right to walk freely in front of the king. No actual official post."

That was setting a direction for Zuo Wuji.

It surely needed replenishment to make it a formal decree, but that was somebody's job. The king didn't need to worry about that...

"That is all. Off court!"

"Wise King!"

This was the day Zuo Wuji officially stepped on the political area at the age of 19. He didn't get an actually post yet, but he could be with the king as he wished and read in the royal house.

This was what Zuo Wuji needed the most at the moment.

The king gave him this on purpose. He wanted to watch Prime

Minister Zuo's grandson and get to know him better.

This was the beginning of Zuo Wuji's life in the court, the one who handled the waves in the future.

...

One month was passed!

In the ice mountain outside the city.

Ye Xiao sat on the top of the mountain cross-legged. He was trying to feel Bing-Er's breath inside the mountain.

Bing-Er was already level five of Sky Origin Stage now!

She was definitely boosting her cultivation tremendously within the month.

She didn't completely use the entire month to grow her cultivation. Every time when she broke through a new level, she would practice martial arts with Ye Xiao, so as to enhance the stability. Ye Xiao never showed mercy when he fought against Bing-Er...

He was like a huge hammer, shaping Bing-Er, the outstanding sword in every second he could use!

He stroke so badly so as to purify her energy as soon as he could!

However, surprisingly, she improved much faster than he expected. Bing-Er didn't show any instability at all, even though her cultivation was rapidly progressing. Ye Xiao knew no matter how hard he worked to stay to stabilize her power, as she improved too fast, she shouldn't be stable like this. However, she was that stable.

Ye Xiao couldn't think it through. He could only explain that Bing-Er was talented. There was nothing else he could think of anyway!

Bing-Er was now breaking through a new level.

After that, she would become level six of Sky Origin Stage!

[If she stays upgrading this fast, we are going to make it before it's too late.] Ye Xiao thought.

However, at this moment, Ye Xiao looked to the capital. He was surprised...

...

In the capital, there were a dozen guys staying in the capital for over a dozen days. They were trying to hide there.

"Where the hell is Feng Monarch now?"

"The second auction is over now... How can he skip such an important event, as he is the owner! What is he doing?"

"What should we do? We got a few supreme dan beads. That is good. But we are not here for this..."

"Guys, do you think it is possible that he knew we are coming, so he hid away?"

"Absolutely not!"

"Then why is it?"

...

"What about we do as I said earlier. We take Wan Zhenghao and question him about Feng Zhiling. He will talk."

"Not wise! We will alert them! Besides, I don't think Feng Monarch cares about Wan Zhenghao that much."

"Wan Zhenghao has a weird background though. The grandmasters told us not to get him involved if we don't really have to. We should focus on Feng Zhiling the most!"

"Once they are alerted and he notices the danger, he may hide away forever. That is only going to get it more and more complicated. We can't stay in between two realms forever."

"Just act cautiously. Kill Feng Zhiling first and then do the investigation on Ling-Bao Hall."

"That's right."

"That is upsetting... Humph... He is just an ant, a Sky Origin Stage ant... And they actually need us to come down for it... God damn it..."

"Don't be upset. Just kill that Feng Monarch and we will return for cultivation! You said it yourself. He is simply in the Sky Origin Stage. It should be easy as a piece of cake. It won't take us much time!"

"Not much time, huh? I have had enough already. You know I will get to Dream Origin Stage just after a little more cultivation! And I suddenly was sent for this stupid mission. It disturbed my schedule completely. I don't know when will I return to that status again..."

"That is true! I only need a little bit of push too! But I was sent over..."

"Come on, you guys. Just get satisfied already. I was feeling the second level of Dream Origin Stage, yet I was stopped... All in all,

this Feng Monarch is completely an annoying prick!"

"Forget it. Complaining won't help. Just go get this ant smashed and return."

"That's right."

"Let's stay energetic! Find him and finish this!"

After waiting for over a dozen days, they were impatient.

"We have been looking for him for so many times. There is no sign of him at all. Even if he can fly up to the sky and burrow down deep to the ground, he couldn't escape our spiritual mind research!"

"He is definitely not in the city. Would he be out of the city?"

"That's right. Let's go out and search for him. Let's take it as a leisure walk..."

"Hmm. I heard there was an ice mountain that popped up from sky. That must be a marvelous scene. I haven't visited it yet... Maybe there are some treasures on that mountain waiting for our visit. If there truly are, this isn't wasting time though..."

"Hmm. Let's go then."

...

Ye Xiao was sitting on the mountain, looking at the capital and a few streams of strong qi shot over. He was a bit worried!

[Why so many superior cultivators?]

[What... What is going on?]

[Did I expose myself accidentally?]

He was upset and worried about it.

There shouldn't be anybody who noticed him here...

He thought his action could draw away people's attention, so he didn't expect to be followed up to this place...

He touched his face and thought that he should stay as Feng Monarch. He couldn't expose his identity as Ye Xiao after all...

In fact, those men came over to the ice mountain for purely coincidence.

They wanted to find Feng Monarch, so they went to Ling-Bao Hall. However, they saw no trace of Feng Monarch. Because Wan Zhenghao had a special background and they didn't want to alert

them, they didn't get on Ling-Bao Hall directly. They had no idea where to get on.

However, when they decided to just have a walk outside the city... There it was the coincidence...

They finally met Feng Monarch!

...

# Chapter 658: By Accident

---

If Ye Xiao knew about this, he would have stayed as Ye Xiao.

Even though Ye Xiao was handsome and graceful, those men wouldn't pay attention to him!

However, he didn't know about it!

He thought that it was safer to stay as Feng Zhiling...

Coincidence after coincidence!

The men were getting closer and closer.

Ye Xiao took a breath out with relief.

[These men seem to be powerful, but they don't look fierce. They are casual.]

[If they are coming for me, why would they not contain murderous qi?]

[They must be here to relax. Or perhaps they just pass by.]

[If they come to see me, all I need to do is to cope with few words.]

This was destiny. If those men showed just a tiny bit of hostility, Ye Xiao could notice the danger and immediately take Bing-Er away.

However, their purpose was just simply to see the ice mountain for leisure...

When Ye Xiao had prepared to greet them first, a sense of breakthrough suddenly came out from the mountain.

It was gradually getting stronger and stronger!

Bing-Er broke through at this moment!

What a coincidence again!

The breaking qi came out and spread away.

The men who were coming over were all experienced cultivators.

They were sensitive in this type of event thus they could immediately feel it and they were all shocked.

"Wait. Somebody is breaking through in this mountain? What a coincidence..."

"True. It is only an ant breaking through, but its power is magnificent. It seems that whoever is upgrading must have a significant martial art. It must be some legendary martial art in this low realm."

"That's correct. The martial art must be even better than the one we gave to our men in this world. Shall we go and take a look?"

"Why not? It is just on the way. It should be their fortune to be watched by us."

They talked and laughed, moving over.

The four men who stayed behind the group of men were superior cultivators of Sunlight Sect and Starlight Sect. They were all Sky Origin Stage cultivators and supreme forces in their sects. However, among the masters from Qing-Yun Realm, they were considered as guides.

The four of them had been following and serving these men for such a long time. They already felt terribly anxious.

[Aren't they here to kill Feng Zhiling?]

[Even though Feng Zhiling is not here, shouldn't they... just go search for him?]

[They did nothing except of watching the Ling-Bao Hall. There are numerous people in Ling-Bao Hall. Why don't they just capture

Wan Zhenghao and force Feng Zhiling to show up. They said that Wang Zhenghao has a special background and they couldn't take him. Thus, they just waited for Feng Zhiling in Ling-Bao Hall. What else they do is hanging around, drinks and games... In fact, it doesn't look like doing anything serious at all.]

[Look how they complain. 'Oh this Feng Monarch stopped my great plan... Oh he affected my cultivation...' But they are having a great time here.]

However, they didn't dare to say it...

They could only follow them and pay for whatever they wanted, tell them where they could have fun and lead them to it.

[We even have to pay for their prostitution... And we pay the tips... Damn it...] One of them thought of it and felt utterly speechless.

They truly didn't know what to say.

[We have been cultivating so hard and we never have been in such a place. These grandmasters actually love it?]

[They simply f\*ck once a day! And it takes them a whole day to finish it!]

[The girls were hurt because of them. I wonder how can they keep being energetic like that...]

[Look at them. They didn't even care about Feng Monarch anymore. They just went out to the city for a tour]

The four of them sighed.

[What a tragedy for the sects...]

[These men are wild horses. They don't look like seriously on a mission!]

[It seems that they don't like to return.]

[Sigh!]

They sighed. However, no matter how bad they felt, they had to follow up.

However, they didn't know that these masters were only 'grandmasters' in Land of Han-Yang. In Qing-Yun Realm, they were simply nothing. In fact, they were just normal disciples in the two sects in Qing-Yun Realm.

This time, they came down to the Land of Han-Yang. It might interrupt their plans, but they stopped feeling inferior after all. They actually felt arrogant superiority in this place. How could they not enjoy this feeling as it was absolutely rare to them?

In fact, they would love to spend more days on this mission. Once they finished, they had to return to Qing-Yun Realm and become a normal low-positioned disciples again.

The reason why they didn't dare to mess with Wan Zhenghao was simple. People in Land of Han-Yang didn't know Gu Jinlong owned Ling-Bao Hall, but Saint Sunlight Sect up in Qing-Yun Realm surely knew it. Gu Jinlong was a superior cultivator in Dao Origin Stage in their sect after all.

Somebody suggested that they should just kill Feng Zhiling and leave Wan Zhenghao alone. He was the representative of Breezing Sword, Gujin Long, the No. 9 of their top 10 powerful disciples. In other words, Ling-Bao Hall belonged to Gu Jinlong. It was absolutely not a wise move to mess with Wan Zhenghao and Ling-Bao Hall!

[Gu Jinlong is already level 3 of Dao Origin Stage. He is hiding for a rush for now. Once he returns, he will be even more powerful in cultivation. If you kill his man and make trouble in his place, he will never let it go!] That was what they thought.

They all knew that Gu Jinlong was not friendly and nice as he looked like. Instead, he was cruel and merciless!

They could take care of Feng Zhiling, but they never dared to hurt Wan Zhenghao and Ling-Bao Hall.

The group of men noticed that somebody was breaking through when they were just nearby the mountain. Since they didn't really

like having a tour in the mountain, they decided to check the cultivator.

From a distance, they saw somebody standing on the top of the ice mountain with the hands behind. He seemed arrogant and vigorous.

He was looking over them.

He stood on the peak, looking down upon the world, like he was a king or a conqueror watching his own land!

The four men in the back saw him and felt thrilled!

They couldn't believe it, so they rubbed their eyes!

[Is it really a coincidence?]

[Isn't it... Monarch of Ling-Bao Hall... Feng Monarch?]

[You can wear out iron shoes in fruitless searching, and yet by a lucky chance you may find the thing without even looking for it!]

[We are here for a tour, but we actually found the man we have been searching so hard!]

The eight men from Qing-Yun Realm had stepped on the

mountain, standing in front of Feng Monarch. They actually said hello to him.

"My friend, you stay at the peak alone, looking down at the mountains and rivers. What an aesthetic mood!"

...

# Chapter 659: Man's Responsibility

---

Ye Xiao was shocked when he looked the eight of them.

He didn't know any of them, but he was familiar to the vigor of them... and... the suits!

It was so familiar that it couldn't be more familiar!

They were enemies he hated the most in his previous life!

The eight of them were dressed in two different types. Four of them wore the clothes with a image of sun on the chest, like it was emitting fever and light. The other four wore the clothes with image of a sky full of stars.

[They are obviously people of Saint Sunlight Sect and Saint Starlight Sect from Qing-Yun Realm!]

[Why would they come here?]

However, they didn't sound hostile. Ye Xiao was confused, but still smiled blandly and said, "Leisure time. I am just hanging out a bit. It must be much better to have a bunch of friends hanging out together, going here and there. It must be good for you guys."

The eight men smiled. They knew this man must be in the top range in this world, even though he was still weaker than them.

However, the vigor and the righteous look of him made them feel like making friends with him. He did give them an outstanding image.

"I am Du Qingpeng. May I have your name?"

Du Qingpeng was the strongest among them. He was the leader this time. With one step up, he would reach level two of Dream Origin Stage! He was good!

He had a thought that all those who were like him would have the same idea when they saw somebody good. [If I can recruit this guy and make him my underling in this world, that will bring me a fortune in the coming days!]

[This guy is outstanding in strength, vigor and appearance.]

[Wan Zhenghao is such a fatty, yet he can live as the richest man in this world for so many years. What if I have a man here? This guy must be much better than Ling-Bao Hall!]

As he thought of this, he couldn't help staring at Ye Xiao with colorful glows in his eyes!

Ye Xiao was surprised. [What the hell is wrong with this man? Does he really have to ask about my name so dissolutely? Look at his eyes? Hmm... Is he... Oh heavens! They have eight and they are all powerful. If they force me to... that would be difficult to say no!]

Ye Xiao was in thoughts. He felt a bit scared. When he just wanted to say something and get away, he saw another four men running over excitedly.

The four last men looked at him with a face like they discovered something priceless. Ye Xiao knew it wasn't a god sign!

[Are these men all that kind of men...]

However, when the four of them spoke, Ye Xiao knew he was wrong about them.

"Feng Monarch, unexpectedly, you are hiding here! What a leisurely mood! Hahaha! Nice to meet you!" The man in front smiled strangely and said, "We have almost turned the entire Chen-Xing City over but just couldn't find you. Luckily, you are here in this cold and silent place. You are so far away from the noise in the city. However, there is a saying, you can wear out iron shoes in fruitless searching, and yet by a lucky chance you may find the thing without even looking for it!"

Another man stared at Ye Xiao. "Feng Monarch, the debt you owe our sects should be paid up today!"

Ye Xiao shrank his gaze and blandly spoke, "I was wondering who. It turns out a pair of escaped fish from my bloody net..." The two who spoke were the two of the twenty-eight men who set him up the other day.

Ye Xiao didn't look carefully at their faces that day, as he was trying so hard to get away with it.

Now that the two guys talked, it reminded him the day.

The conversation enlightened the eight superior cultivators.  
[What? This... This is Feng Monarch? The man we have been searching for a long time? Feng Zhiling?]

[We worked so hard yet failed to get a trace of him. Now we are here for fun and we found him?]

[What a coincidence!]

[Things are strange in the world!]

"So you are Feng Zhiling? Monarch of Ling-Bao Hall?" Du Qingpeng frowned as his eyes looked fierce now.

[If he is Feng Zhiling, I will never use him. A man who cannot be recruited, the more powerful he is, the more he should be killed, for the sect or for myself!]

Ye Xiao blandly said, "I am. So?"

He looked calm and indifferent. However, in his mind he knew there was a fatal danger ahead of him!

[Am I going to die here eventually?]

[This is striking my weak ribs!]

[I usually can run away when I cannot win the battle.]

[They are all superior cultivators. Even the weakest four are Sky Origin Stage. They are all stronger than me. The eight from Qing-Yun Realm are much stronger than me for sure. They should be at least Spirit Origin Stage!]

In fact, Ye Xiao was confident that he could flee away if he wanted. Maybe he would be injured, but he could get away!

As long as the eight of them didn't stay together all the time, Ye Xiao might be able to kill them one by one!

However, he couldn't leave!

Bing-Er was still there!

She was cultivating in the mountain and didn't know anything outside.

[How can I leave? Even if I successfully get away, what about Bing-Er? If she ends up in these men's hands... That will be inconceivably bad!]

He sighed, but then made up his mind immediately.

He would regret for the rest of his life if he ran without Bing-Er and left her to those men. He could never put down a man's responsibility!

A man who abandoned his beloved ones for life had nothing to live for!

[Since fate has pushed me to this end, I can only do what I can now.]

[If I die, I have nothing to regret. As long as I am still breathing, I will protect my girl!]

His eyes turned sharp and stable.

Du Qingpeng's eyes suddenly looked fierce, changing from the original nice and friendly. He nodded and said, "Pleasure! I have heard about Feng Monarch many times. You do have an outstanding vigor, just like everybody says!"

Ye Xiao took in a deep breath and spoke with his hands behind, "Qing-Yun Realm? Saint Sunlight Sect? Saint Starlight Sect?"

Du Qingpeng was surprised. He spoke in a deep voice, "Feng Monarch, you are a well-informed man. You know where we came

from just by looking at us."

He waved his hand the the other seven men jumped up and crossed by each other.

- Shoot, shoot, shoot... -

The seven men became a bit further from them, but they occupied the positive attacking position in all directions!

A murderous qi was overwhelming the entire land.

Suddenly, Ye Xiao was surrounded!

The four Sky Origin Stage guys of Sunlight Sect and Starlight Sect stepped away immediately.

They backed off dozens of meters to get away from fight!

Apparently, what Feng Zhiling did made them think he was unbelievably strong. They could never defend any attack from him. That was why they decided to get far away from the fight before it really began!

...

# Chapter 660: Qing-Yun Realm Cultivators

---

Du Qingpeng smiled. "I heard our men in the sect said that Feng Monarch moves so fast and weirdly. We just want to make sure you will stay and solve the grudge in our hearts. I don't want to leave. Before we start, I guess I should introduce my brothers who are going to make the attacks later to you, in case you don't know who killed you when you go down to hell later. That will be cruel."

"The one on the right, with white cloths and red face, is one of the fifth generation of Saint Sunlight Sect. He is level eight of Spirit Origin Stage, named Shang Yushu. His sword art is wonderful. You better pay attention to that. You will easily get yourself cut all around your body if you are reckless."

Shang Yushu stood on the right, smiled to Ye Xiao and nodded. "Feng Monarch, regards."

Ye Xiao blandly said, "Since you have asked for a fight, I should surely accept it."

"The one in your right nearby is also a fifth generation of Saint Sunlight Sect, level eight of Spirit Origin Stage, Shang Yuming. He and Shang Yushu are brothers. They are connected in minds. When they fight together, it is magnificent. If you like, you can fight them together." Du Qingpeng smiled.

"The two behind you are also the fifth generation, Fu Yuntian and Tang Yidao. Hehe... Feng Monarch, Brother Tang is level one of Dream Origin Stage... He is good... Hmm. Right, I am Du

Qingpeng. I should have told you more about me. I am also shamefully level one of Dream Origin Stage, from Saint Starlight Sect."

"There are four of us here for Feng Monarch. The other three are my junior brothers in our sect, Xu Wenxiang, Yu Xiangdong and Cheng Yihe."

He smiled and continued, "So if nothing goes wrong, one of us will end your life today."

Ye Xiao laughed loudly and said, "You mean you can only make it when there is nothing unexpected to you happens? What if I can make lots of surprise for you guys? I wonder how big a surprise it is if I send the eight of you away together?"

Du Qingpeng half closed his eyes and spoke in a deep voice, "We are tired of this noisy and boring world for a long time. If you truly are that capable, we don't mind if you can give us a ride. However, are you? I hope you are not just bragging, because we will be disappointed."

Ye Xiao took a deep breath. He felt the spiritual power in his body was boiling up. A bursting power was rising up from dantian. He was ready to fight so he fiercely said, "Since nothing can stop this fight, what are you waiting for? Come one!"

Du Qingpeng blandly spoke, "Before we do this, I have one thing to ask. I am curious about one thing. In this mountain, who is breaking through now?"

Ye Xiao's pupils shrank and he said, "That is none of your business. You don't need to know!"

Du Qingpeng coldly smiled. "No. We have to know. That person must be very important to you, right?"

Ye Xiao suddenly calmed down.

Du Qingpeng casually spoke, "Hmm. I was right. Because somebody needs to break through here, so you came to offer protection... I guess this person must be very important to you... Otherwise, you wouldn't stay here for such a long time..."

He stared at Ye Xiao with his half-closed eyes. "In other words, even though you can escape now, you won't! You will only fight till you die! Are you going to die fighting?"

He suddenly laughed loudly while facing up. "What a wonderful news to us! It is an opportunity that we never needed, but it is fun. It also saves us time!"

Ye Xiao was worried. His face was turning gloomier and gloomier. He said, "Can you just cut the sh\*t. Don't you feel stupid talking so much? Are you going to defeat me by talking? Kill me with words? You have a sharp tongue yet it can't kill!"

Du Qingpeng's face turned cold. He said, "I think you are the one who has a sharp tongue here! Go get him!"

Yu Xiangdong, the man beside him who was level eight of Spirit Origin Stage, suddenly jumped up. He rolled in the sky, and it looked like the stars were shining in the sky in the day time.

Stars shined in everybody's sight!

His black robe was like dark clouds from the sky, getting down over to Ye Xiao!

Ye Xiao felt the huge difference between Sky Origin Stage and Spirit Origin Stage right away when he made that move. That was a huge gap!

At the moment, the suppression on him felt like solid.

In the sky, a sword showed here and there like ghost among the shining stars. It suddenly disappeared in the stars and then chopped down to Ye Xiao's head.

Ye Xiao felt that the enemy was aiming at his mouth.

It seemed Du Qingpeng was pissed by what Ye Xiao said, so he told his man to get Ye Xiao, but in fact it was to get his tongue! Yu Xiangdong totally got it.

He was aiming to cut Ye Xiao's tongue.

Ye Xiao was level nine of Sky Origin Stage. While Bing-Er was cultivating, Ye Xiao was also improving himself. Now, he was in the middle of level nine. As long as he wanted, he could make the last break of Sky Origin Stage any time he wanted within a few days. He could get beyond the limitation of this world and reach Spirit Origin Stage.

However, the opponent was in level eight of Spirit Origin Stage. That was nearly ten levels gap there!

If he got directly hit by the attack, he would die for sure!

He didn't dare to hesitate, so he stepped back a few steps. Suddenly, he clapped his hands and the golden hand was shown!

One of the Sky Origin Stage cultivator from Sunlight Sect shouted, "Watch out his poison!"

It happened so fast. Ye Xiao had made over a dozen palm strikes ahead. Yu Xiangdong was moving fast in the sky, however, Ye Xiao was also fast. When he made one step back, he made two palm strikes ahead. The two strikes were not to defend the opponent. He was hitting the place where Yu Xiangdong wasn't able to dodge. He struck in the perfect moment and in the perfect position. If he wasn't so much weaker than Yu Xiangdong, he could have even killed Yu Xiangdong!

Yu Xiangdong realized it, so he didn't dare to rush forward any faster.

...

# Chapter 661: Tough Fight

---

Yu Xiangdong didn't get what he aimed for. Instead, he was restrained by Ye Xiao. He was furious and he shouted. He desperately pushed down on Ye Xiao and took two palm strikes from him firmly. He just wanted to get Ye Xiao down as soon as he could!

Ye Xiao was only level nine of Sky Origin Stage. That was nearly ten levels lower than Yu Xiangdong.

For Yu Xiangdong, he thought a few palm strikes wouldn't hurt that much, even though it was some strange palm hit. At the moment he was hit, he was close enough to get Feng Zhiling.

Yu Xiangdong got over fast and yet he revealed loopholes of himself. The stars shined even brightly around him!

Ye Xiao half closed his eyes and reached for the chest of his opponent with the golden hand. As he was so close to touching the latter's chest, he moved his wrist and a needle shot out like lightning from his palm.

"Bastard!" Yu Xiangdong noticed it and he shouted. He rolled in the air quickly and span himself like a fried dough twist. He actually successfully dodged the shooting needle. He was totally furious about it.

That needle nearly shot into his heart and went through him!

He escaped that fatal needle attack, but still felt weirdly cold on the chest.

Suddenly, the feeling spread fast on the chest. Yu Xiangdong shouted and then made an axe strike with his palm. He directly chopped off the skin and flesh around the place that was touched by the needle!

Blood splashed. He threw away that piece of flesh, and dark smoke came out from it. After a while, the piece of flesh became a mass of dark smoke!

Yu Xiangdong looked down to check on the wound. He had cut off the affected flesh right away, so it wouldn't cause any further damage to his body.

However, it still felt bad on the wounded area.

Nobody had thought that Yu Xiangdong's test attack would lead to such a result. It was lucky for him to react fast. If not, he must have turned to a mass of smoke like that piece of flesh!

All the others were shocked by the series of movements!

The man who was equally powerful as Yu Xiangdong was so terrified that his face turned pale.

[This man should be no stronger than level nine of Sky Origin Stage. He is not powerful. He is like an ant in for us. He is nothing.]

[However, the way he uses poison is excellent! That is difficult to defend indeed!]

[The poison is marvelous too. I thought his poison should be only effective on people under Sky Origin Stage. However, it still is overwhelming on Spirit Origin Stage cultivators. That was such a terrifying scene!]

Yu Xiangdong didn't dare to hesitate. He put some medical powder on his chest and swallowed three dan beads and anti-poison medicines... Even though he knew the poison didn't get in his body, he decided to be cautious about it. What happened to that piece of flesh was... terrifying after all!

While he was busy taking care of the wound, something happened again. Suddenly, a stream of golden light flashed. A figure showed in his sight and suddenly got close to him.

When he looked up, he saw Ye Xiao making palm attacks like a rainstorm. They smashed on him like an axe! That was powerful and fierce, leaving no time for Yu Xiangdong to even breath!

The medical powder on the wound was actually flicked away by the palm hits.

In other words, all that Yu Xiangdong did was totally for nothing!

"That is going too far!" He was totally furious. He didn't dodge anymore. Instead, he defended against the attacks and pushed out a palm strike! That was extremely powerful and hard!

The two palm hits crashed!

- Boom! -

Ye Xiao was hit away, backing off. He spat out blood. Even though he was more than one hundred times experienced than Yu Xiangdong, the latter was over ten times stronger than him in power!

Ten times meant absolute difference!

The tough hit made Ye Xiao look fierce and overwhelming, but because of the huge gap, he was blasted inside his body!

Although Yu Xiangdong defended hurriedly, he didn't really get hurt that much. He rushed over to Ye Xiao and made another palm hit again!

[You wouldn't let me rest. Fine. You think I will let you?]

He was not just getting to Ye Xiao now. He was killing him!

He had never thought that he would be suppressed so awkwardly

in this low realm.

Yu Xiangdong was like a dark shadow that suddenly flashed to the upper sky, along with the lights of the stars. A palm strike was dropping down murderously!

[You pushed me, then I will push you!]

Ye Xiao's eyes were filled with obstinateness. He didn't try to get away. Instead, he made a palm hit upward.

Two hands were getting closer rapidly!

The others were all gloating already.

There was a huge gap between the two of them. This palm hit would prove it!

This time, Yu Xiangdong made the attack with his full power. Once the two hands touched, the mission was done for the guys!

[This Feng Monarch is a supreme master martial artist already in Land of Han-Yang!]

[He could be invincible here!]

[However, for people in Qing-Yun Realm, he is too weak!]

Yu Xiangdong and Feng Zhiling made a tough hit hand to hand. The only result was Feng Zhiling's death!

However, Feng Monarch suddenly shouted loudly and the golden light shined even brighter. The golden light filled everybody's sight and suddenly, they couldn't find his hand!

Apparently, he was making a palm hit with full power for his life.

The others only shook their heads.

[No matter how you try... No matter how desperate you are to make it with full power... it won't work! Do you think a stream can crash the ocean?]

[One hit and it is done. Life and death hit. After this, there will be no other possible result! Yu Xiangdong win and Feng Zhiling dies!]

- Bang! -

The two hands crashed!

However, what happened was out of everybody's expectation...

...

# Chapter 662: Reverse Knock of Golden Soul Blast

---

Feng Zhiling wasn't defeated by this tough hit. He wasn't even knocked back. He didn't die and he didn't back off either. Instead, he rushed forward with a much stronger vigor!

And then a sound of cracking was reverberated. Yu Xiangdong made a horrible exclamation as he was actually hit by Feng Zhiling and his entire arm was broken into pieces. The power went over to his shoulder and even his chest!

That was a smooth process. Feng Zhiling didn't slow down even a bit!

After this hit, Yu Xiangdong fell to the floor like a pile of mug. He was screaming!

At the same time, blood came out from his mouth, nose, ears and eyes. He was apparently dead!

It was ended by one strike, but not as expected. Yu Xiangdong died while Feng Zhiling won!

The others were all astonished by such a surprising outcome! Their eyeballs nearly popped out because of the astonishment!

[What... What the hell is going on?]

It was obvious that one was strong while other other was weak. Feng Zhiling was so much weaker than Yu Xiangdong. He was like the earth and Yu Xiangdong was the sky! The first palm hit proved everything! How come this time Yu Xiangdong died?

It didn't make sense!

In fact, things happened for reasons. Ye Xiao won the fight, then there must be reason for it. As for the reason...

When Ye Xiao made the palm strike, he took out Brother Egg and put it in the hand. Brother Egg made the strike... so... basically, Yu Xiangdong was attacking Brother Egg with his full power. Brother Egg had killed Gu Jinlong, who was level three of Dao Origin Stage! Yu Xiangdong was soft like a cake in front of Brother Egg, so of course, he was defeated! Of course, he was dead!

That was hitting a rock with an egg... Well... it was the egg not the rock though... Anyways, you know what it mean!

After Yu Xiangdong had hit the egg, the golden light was still shining. Ye Xiao took away Brother Egg, and he was totally unharmed. It was clear and clean. For the others, it was Feng Zhiling defeating a level eight Spirit Origin Stage cultivator by one hit!

That was obvious!

Ye Xiao wiped the blood on his mouth and blandly said, "Spirit Origin Stage, huh? Just like that! Who else?"

Du Qingpeng shrank his gaze and stared at Ye Xiao. He blandly spoke, "Your cultivation level... Your power... You can't be this strong! There seems to be something in your hand just now... What is it? Weapons? Magic treasure?"

Suddenly, he shouted, "Show it!"

His eyes lit up as he stared at Ye Xiao. Suddenly, a mass of enormous starlight shined on his body. The light suddenly covered Ye Xiao's entire body!

It happened so fast that Ye Xiao didn't have time to react. He couldn't move.

A strong spiritual mind was searching on his body, but it got nothing. Du Qingpeng stared at the ring on the finger of the hand that was injured. He moved ahead and swayed his hand with splendid shining starlights. The light turned into the shape of a knife, chopping down on Ye Xiao's right hand!

The Starlight Blade!

All the others recognized it.

[Feng Zhiling is not powerful himself. However, he killed Yu Xiangdong, who was much stronger than him. He must have a

special treasure. That treasure allows him to kill somebody who is much stronger than him. How powerful is that thing?]

Du Qingpeng thought about this before others did. He didn't think much. He just moved. The others all felt upset about it.

They didn't upset because of Yu Xiangdong's death. They didn't care about it at all!

They had the same thought at the moment. [No! The precious treasure is going to belong to Du Qingpeng now. God damn it. I should have taken a move before him.]

They were regretting.

All people in Qing-Yun Realm had the same kind of thoughts. It was a world only stronger men survived. The death of the weak meant nothing. Strength meant all. They wouldn't give up anything that could make them stronger!

Some of them even started to make vicious plans like killing Du Qingpeng when they were heading back and snatching the treasure.

Starlight Blade was stricken down with incredible colors.

Ye Xiao couldn't move under the restraint, however, his spiritual mind was free.

Suddenly, a stream of golden light appeared!

- Bang! - The golden light shot over to the Starlight Blade in an incredible speed.

Du Qingpeng was shocked as the Starlight Blade exploded. Du Qingpeng hunched, but then he spat out blood. He was staggering, backing off over a dozen steps. He couldn't hold it. He sat on the floor with his face extremely pale.

He was seriously wounded within just seconds!

Ye Xiao seemed fine. There was a small golden tower in his hand.

The small tower was the size as his hand. It was somehow adorable.

At the moment, it was emitting yellow glow, spinning in Ye Xiao's hand.

Apparently, that small tower was the thing that defended against Du Qingpeng's overwhelming attack and knocked him bad seriously!

What kind of treasure was it that was so strong that even Du Qingpeng was seriously wounded?

The others were all frightened!

Du Qingpeng was not the strongest among them, but he was definitely the second or the third. If he was defeated within one strike, the others should feel scared by now!

They felt lucky now. If any of them instead of Du Qingpeng made that attack, they might be dead by now!

If Ye Xiao wasn't in a bad condition now, the others would have fled away a while earlier!

Unexpected things happened one by one. Yu Xiangdong was dead and Du Qingpeng was badly injured. However, Ye Xiao paid what it took. He wasn't in a good condition now. While Du Qingpeng sat on the floor, Ye Xiao spat out blood again. His sight even felt blurry.

Du Qingpeng was much stronger than Yu Xiangdong. He was in Dream Origin Stage! That was several times stronger. He should be dozens of times stronger than Ye Xiao!

The reason why Du Qingpeng was injured so badly was mainly because of the Golden Soul Tower, not really Ye Xiao himself.

The Golden Soul Tower wasn't that important for Master Bai and Lord Ling. It was simply a good treasure. For people in the Qing-Yun Realm, it was something extremely valuable after all. Ye Xiao operated it with his spiritual mind. It suddenly moved and broke

the Starlight Blade and damaged Du Qingpeng.

...

# Chapter 663: Impregnable

---

To finish that, Ye Xiao didn't make any effort really. It was completely the energy of Golden Soul Tower. Ye Xiao was seriously injured too, because he was definitely too weak himself. The Golden Soul Tower had vanished over eighty percent of the power of Sunlight Blade. The less than twenty percent power still badly hurt Ye Xiao.

Ye Xiao was still too weak at the moment, so he couldn't use Golden Soul Tower perfectly yet. He could operate it and put it in front to defend from attacks, so that it would make a counterattack itself.

However, he couldn't handle the reverse impact from the tower. The enemy was too strong this time. Even if it was less than twenty percent of the energy, it still damaged him!

The only thing he could use was the Golden Soul Tower after all!

It was silent. The others were all quiet.

[So this is Feng Zhiling's ace card? That is overwhelming. But he doesn't look fine. I guess he has to pay for the massive attack using that treasure!]

They were having blind guesses, but they were right about one thing. Feng Zhiling was not fine. He was the opposite of fine!

Ye Xiao took a deep breath and forcibly stood up. Du Qingpeng was almost level two of Dream Origin Stage. The twenty percent reverse impact from his attack damaged Ye Xiao as bad as he was hit by a Sky Origin Stage cultivator in full power!

However, he stood straight and didn't show any weakness.

Golden Soul Tower was still spinning in Ye Xiao's hand while blood was coming out from his mouth. He looked extremely vicious and scary!

Du Qingpeng and the other six men saw Ye Xiao's eyes. They all felt frightened somehow! The murderous qi in the eyes was so dense that they had never experienced something like that before!

They knew that they should absolutely kill a man who could show that murderous qi to them. Otherwise, they wouldn't be able to sleep comfortably in the future.

They were relieved after that. [No matter how strong you look like, you are actually weak. At least you are now!]

[Besides... that tower...]

Their eyes were filled with greed.

That was a treasure which was powerful enough to help a Sky Origin Stage cultivator damage a Dream Origin Stage cultivator!

[If I have that tower, I am going to be so powerful!]

They stepped slowly ahead, narrowing down the surrounding!

Du Qingpeng forcibly stood up and walked over to him step by step. Apparently, even though he was injured, he wouldn't give up on the treasure.

The six of them jumped up all of a sudden and moved towards Ye Xiao like lightning. At the moment, they had the same thought. [Du Qingpeng is wounded. I can't let any of the others snatch the treasure!]

Du Qingpeng gathered up his energy forcibly and shouted, "Get it to me!" And he rushed over too.

Seven streams of strong power worked together but restrained each other at the same time. They were all striking down on Ye Xiao like tide.

Ye Xiao humped. He thought about what Ling Wuxie taught him on how to use Golden Soul Tower. When he and Ling Wuxie talked about it, they were only having a casual chat... Now...

Ye Xiao waved his hand and fiercely shouted, "Golden Soul Shroud!"

The small golden tower rose up to the air and suddenly emitted strong golden lights. It became like a huge bell shield falling down.

- Puff! -

When the seven men almost got Ye Xiao, the bell of light covered Ye Xiao entirely!

The seven men nearly hit on the bell.

[Humph. I don't have the energy to attack, but... I can do a great defense!]

[These men can never break the shield of Golden Soul Tower.

The absolute defense was set. Ye Xiao didn't hesitate. He grabbed a few dan beads and immediately swallowed them and then he was gasping.

"Bastard!"

The seven men started to strike on the bell of light.

- Bang, bang, bang... -

The powerful qi kept striking on the Golden Soul Tower. The tower remained firm and tough.

The power could have destroyed a huge mountain, yet when it was hit on the small tower, it just disappeared like mud getting into water.

Some of them tried to hold the shield so as to turn the tower over and kill Feng Monarch. However, the shield seemed bonded to the ground. It was a part of the earth. It just couldn't be moved. No matter how strong the power used to strike it, it was only like an ant hitting a three.

It made no difference.

The seven of them tried whatever they could, and all treasures they had to do it. They wouldn't even try so hard to save their lives. However, it wouldn't work.

Their eyes were filled with even stronger fever!

The tower could defend such powerful and wild attacks and remain unmoved. That meant it was a marvelous treasure!

At the same time, they were confused. [Such treasure should belong to stronger people like us, but it ends up in this ant's hands. Why?]

[What a waste! Such a great waste!]

They started to attack it again. The seven of them were all exhausted, but nothing happened. They had to give up and stop attacking one by one. They stared at the tower and felt helpless. However, their eyes were still filled with greed.

"It won't work. We can't break it!"

"What is this thing..."

"It is too tough."

"We can't even move it. What should we do?"

"He can't stay in there forever. He has to come out. Otherwise, he will be starved to death."

"Forget it. He has a space ring. How much food do you think he has in the ring? Besides, he surely has a few bottles of dan beads even if he doesn't have any food. He is a master dan-maker. Remember that! The supreme dan beads he has can support him for a few years. Not to mention years, we can't even wait for one month..."

"What should we do then?"

"How do I know? I would have done it if I know! Why would I having this bullsh\*t conversation with you?"

"Why do you keep talking bullsh\*t if you don't know what to do..."

They were impatient. The enemy was right in front of them, yet they could do nothing to him. They even had to watch him recover...

A powerful and precious treasure was right there, but they couldn't even touch it!

What a suffering!

"This small tower is marvelous. It is invulnerable... It won't even shake when we hit it. He is untouchable inside there... What should we do?"

They frowned while lost in thoughts...

"Oh, right!" Du Qingpeng spoke with a pale face, "Didn't we feel the sign of somebody breaking through in here? There must be somebody cultivating around here. Feng Monarch is here to protect the cultivator... That cultivator must be very important to Feng Zhiling!"

As he said so, the others were enlightened. "That is right! We go capture that person and threaten Feng Zhiling! I don't think that cultivator has another treasure like this!"

...

# Chapter 664: Failed at the End!

---

"Let's do this. Two of us go get that guy in the cave!" Du Qingpeng gave the order. "I don't think this Feng Monarch is invincible and hardhearted!"

Shang Yushu and Shang Yuming answered him and then left right away.

They were twin brothers. Each of them were in level eight of Spirit Origin Stage, but when they fought together, they were much stronger than that. They were no weaker than ordinary Dream Origin Stage cultivators. The two of them were the best ones to go do the capture.

"Wait!"

Ye Xiao's voice came from the shield.

After that, Golden Soul Tower slowly rose up. Feng Zhiling showed up in front of the people again. He stared at the men fiercely and said, "I am the one you want! This isn't finished yet! Do not go mess with others! It only makes you despicable! Cultivators of the two great sects in Qing-Yun Realm are just that rubbish!"

There was blood coming out from his mouth while he talked.

The small tower was unmoved under the powerful attacks of the

seven superior cultivators, mostly because it was powerful, but also because Ye Xiao transferred the energy to the tower after he took the dan beads.

He used most of the energy to maintain the defensive power. The wounds on him didn't recover. Instead because of the energy consumption, his body was getting worse.

If those men kept attacking for longer, Ye Xiao would ran out of energy to maintain the shield and he would be exposed to them.

However, they thought Feng Zhiling could last forever easily, so they started to plan on Bing-Er. Ye Xiao couldn't let them. He knew he was in a negative situation, but he had to step out for Bing-Er.

When he came out, he made a decision.

It was a crazy decision!

Ye Xiao could still make a last strike.

That was an extreme strike!

Soul sacrifice for Golden Soul Tower. The owner broke his soul to trigger the explosion of the tower!

If Golden Soul Tower exploded, even though there was not much

energy remained in the tower, it would still cause a huge blast. At least... it would destroy everything within one thousand miles... that includes half of the Chen-Xing City!

The seven men would never be able to survive that!

In fact, if the Golden Soul Tower was in full power, it could destroy the entire Land of Han-Yang!

It was after all a treasure from Human Realm Upon Heavens. It wasn't that good in where it was from, but it was already marvelous here!

At this moment, when they were focusing on each other, nobody noticed that there was an even colder qi exploding inside the mountain...

"I never knew that Feng Monarch is particular about loyalty to friends. I am curious. Who is that cultivator cultivating under the ground... Feng Monarch actually gave up his own life for that guy..." Du Qingpeng stared at Ye Xiao.

Specifically, he was staring at the Golden Soul Tower in his hand.

He didn't even try to hide the greed in his eyes.

"Don't you worry about it!" Ye Xiao blandly spoke, "It is none of your business. Besides, you won't be able to figure it out..."

"You will all die! All of you!" Ye Xiao coldly laughed. His soul was immediately tied with Golden Soul Tower. There was madness inside his eyes.

"Damn it! He is going to destroy the treasure! Quick! Attack! All of you! Stop him!"

Du Qingpeng was indeed a capable Dream Origin Stage cultivator. He was experienced. He noticed it so he shouted as he made a palm hit out.

The other six were enlightened. At the same time, they made their strikes too!

After that, seven streams of spiritual mind were rushing over to crash Ye Xiao's spiritual mind...

Du Qingpeng had locked on Ye Xiao with his spiritual mind earlier. Now, he just made the attack immediately!

It needed one's soul energy to trigger the treasure explosion. If they destroyed Feng Zhiling's spiritual mind, the explosion could be stopped!

- Boom... -

Wind was blowing wildly. Seven streams of overwhelming power

of palm hit arrived!

Golden Soul Power started to emit yellow light again. It stopped the palm hit and then again, twenty percent of the power hit on Ye Xiao!

- Crack... -

Ye Xiao gritted with the teeth. He barely defended against the palm strikes but couldn't help backing off.

His two legs, ribs and the right hand which was holding the tower were all broken.

- Puff! - All of a sudden, the tower fell off his hand and then disappeared.

Without the support of Ye Xiao's spiritual mind, it automatically returned to Ye Xiao's body.

Ye Xiao just fell back on the floor. His eyes were staring at the sky.

[Is it only that much? Am I really that weak?]

[I was in the last step already. I just needed to trigger the tower by my soul power, and it will explode. But I failed!]

When he was about to trigger the tower, he felt a feeling of confusion from the tower. It seemed the tower couldn't believe he was doing this, and it didn't want to do this. Ye Xiao just ignored it. As long as he made the final step with his spiritual mind, it would explode!

However, before he could do it, he was blasted by the enemies' spiritual mind attack. It broke his spiritual mind and made him dazed for a second.

That was the second when his soul was cut off from the tower.

The tower returned to his body.

It would take him some time to operate it again and trigger the explosion.

He didn't have that time now. Not even a bit.

He didn't even have the energy to tie his soul to the tower.

He was totally exhausted!

When one was too weak, it was impossible to even perish together with the enemies!

"So this is it? I am dying now?" Ye Xiao fell to the ground slowly. He was lost in chaos. He smiled bitterly and murmured, "What

about Bing-Er... I... I don't want to give up on her..."

Faces flashed over in his sight.

Jun Yinglian with white cloths and long hair suddenly showed up and grumbled, "Ye Xiao, you heartbreaker. You said you owed me your next life! Where is it? You broke your words again and again. I hate you!"

Bing-Er's face showed up, looking at him, delicate and touching. "Master, you can't leave me alone. You said you will take me to the upper realm..."

Another girl showed up, Su Yeyue, with a pretty face of tears, "You scoundrel. You promised you will come see me. Why haven't you come yet? How could you not!"

...

# Chapter 665: Demon Showed Up!

---

There were many other faces flashing over in Ye Xiao's sight. Ye Xiao was lost in chaotic confusion. He murmured, "Sorry... I thought I could..."

- Bang! -

He fell on the floor.

He could have left.

Ye Xiao knew he could have escaped, but he couldn't now!

Bing-Er was still there!

If he left, Bing-Er would be in trouble.

[I would rather die. I am not leaving. I won't know anything if I am dead, but if I leave alive, I know the pain. I would rather die!]

That was a man's sense of responsibility!

"Dead?" Du Qingpeng shouted weirdly and stepped forward. He searched on the floor for the tower but found nothing. "Where is the small tower? It disappeared? Could it be... That it is an ultimate treasure that will bond to his body?"

As he was talking, he took out a sword. "I don't care. Let me cut this bastard into pieces and it will be found!"

The sword flashed. It chopped down. He was going to chop Ye Xiao into pieces!

At this moment, a mass of extreme cold qi burst from inside the cave!

Suddenly, the entire world was fell into ultimate coldness!

Everybody felt like frozen...

Du Qingpeng was holding the sword. It stopped in the air, and he couldn't move it anymore. The sword wouldn't go down anymore. It was fixed in the air!

His eyes were suddenly filled with fear.

[Who is that?]

[How is it possible to be so powerful...]

[This extreme coldness. I have never felt such thing even in Qing-Yun Realm...]

A scream sounded and shocked the sky. A clear voice exclaimed with complex emotions, "Ye Xiao! I am going to cut you into pieces!"

The voice rushed up to the sky and shook the mountain!

That shout was actually so overwhelming. How powerful should the person be?

- puff! -

Suddenly, the mountain was shaking again. - Boom! - A round hole appeared on top of the mountain, connecting the inside of the mountain!

The rocks around the hole were all turned into ashes and flew away in the wind.

A flash of white color appeared and stopped on the top of the mountain.

The white figure looked around and then suddenly appeared in front of Du Qingpeng!

It was a woman!

A gorgeous woman who was unbelievably and indescribable beautiful.

She was wearing white clothes, long hair, perfect shaped body, like a fairy descending from heavens.

However, she was surrounded with murderous qi at the moment!

The enormous murderous qi seemed to destroy the entire world.

Influenced by such murderous qi, even though Du Qingpeng and his men were well cultivated, they were trembling. They couldn't even look directly at the woman's face...

They could feel it. This woman was so powerful that they didn't even have a chance to try defending against her!

She moved her feet but then suddenly stopped.

Du Qingpeng made up his mind and looked at her.

She had her back facing him, checking on Feng Zhiling on the floor, who was in a coma. Her beautiful body was quivering a little bit.

Even though she only showed her back on Du Qingpeng, he could feel that she was lost and hesitating...

"Is he... dead?" The woman in white quivered. She stared at Feng Zhiling and coldly spoke.

Nobody dared to answer.

She slightly bended to touch Ye Xiao's chest with her pale hand which was beautiful like jade. Her eyes lit up. [Still breathing...] And then her face turned dark. She gritted with her teeth and fiercely said, "You want to die? Not so easy!"

"You will die in my hands!"

Suddenly, a powerful energy flow appeared. It was spreading in the area. She was actually healing Feng Zhiling!

The seven men obviously felt it.

[She doesn't seem so tough like she acts...]

[She was confused just now. That was weird...]

[She kept showing her back on us and didn't even want to turn around.]

[How arrogant!]

[She just started to cure Feng Monarch in the middle of our surrounding?]

[Even though she is rather powerful, isn't this too arrogant?]

Du Qingpeng's eyes suddenly turned fierce. He made a hint with a gesture.

The others nodded. They got it.

[This woman is unbelievably strong. We are not her match...]

[However, she is in a daze... She talks like she hates Feng Monarch deeply, but confusingly... she cares about the wounds on Feng Monarch!]

[She even started to cure him, despite of the current situation!]

[Now the situation has changed again!]

[This may be our only chance now!]

[Now when she is focusing on curing that guy, and she is confused, lost, blank...]

[Maybe heavens bless us. We make a joint attack now. Feng Zhiling will die and even this powerful strange woman will die too!]

"Die!"

Du Qingpeng's sword suddenly emitted lights of stars, swaying over to the woman in white!

At the same time, the other six all made their strongest strike with their swords or knives!

Seven of them struck together to attack this woman who was lost in confusion...

The woman kept his hand on Feng Zhiling's chest. Her spiritual power kept floating out, long and soft. She seemed totally indifferent to the attack of the seven men. She didn't even seem like defending against them!

The seven men were so happy!

- Shoot! -

Seven top quality weapons hit on the woman's perfect body firmly!

However, she didn't die. Feng Zhiling didn't die. They didn't get cut into pieces as they wished...

"Ah..."

"Puff..."

The hands of the seven guys were broken at the same time. They were blasted so badly that they flew out fast, exclaiming with blood spraying out their mouths, eyes, noses and ears!

The woman didn't do anything to defend against them. She just kept the spiritual qi running around her body. It actually stopped the attack from the seven guys and at the same time blasted them out!

It didn't interrupt her from healing Feng Zhiling at all. She was still pouring the spiritual power out softly!

The seven guys felt extremely terrified!

[What level is she?]

[That is even stronger than any great figures we have seen in Qing-Yun Realm!]

...

# Chapter 666: Bing-Er? Xuan Bing?

---

The woman in white finally stopped healing Feng Zhiling. She stood straight up and turned slowly around.

Her gorgeous and exquisite face showed up in front of the men again. However, on her face was a mix of complex expressions.

She couldn't control it herself.

When she looked at the men, her pretty face was full of murderous intent.

"You hurt him, huh?" she blandly asked.

Before they answered, she nodded and said, "Hmm. You can go to hell then!"

At this moment, it seemed she had condemned them for their crime. She sentenced them to death!

Her eyes suddenly emitted extremely cold murderous qi. She raised up her right hand and withdrew it while shouting at Du Qingpeng, "Get over here!"

Du Qingpeng couldn't control his own body. It flew over to her from over two hundred meters away. He was terrified! He couldn't move!

He couldn't fly that far even if he wanted. However, the woman just dragged him over from such a distance. No matter how hard he tried to resist it, he flew over to her fast.

How powerful was that?

The others were all frightened!

"People from Saint Sunlight Sect and Saint Starlight Sect..." She frowned and then smacked him on the face.

A horrible scene was shown.

Du Qingpeng's head was slapped off his neck and flew out. It "accidentally" hit another man's head, and crashed that man's head into pieces...

That was not the end. Du Qingpeng's flying head didn't stop yet. It kept shooting on the other men's heads, until all the heads were smashed. The head eventually flew away.

The four Sky Origin Stage folks who had been watching this were scared sh\*tless. They were now running the hell out of this place!

That was so horrible!

That woman was exactly like a demon...

While they were running away, a sound of wind sounded behind them. It was Du Qingpeng's head chasing after them after crashing six heads. No matter how the four of them tried, it kept aiming at their heads! They couldn't dodge it!

The head finally finished its job, smashing ten heads, and then it became ashes!

Eleven men died in such strange and horrible way!

The woman just smacked the a head! That was all!

Ye Xiao was still in coma.

The woman was curing him, but she didn't let him wake up.

"It is your honor to die under my attack..."

After she made sure those men were all dead, she turned around and focused on the man on the floor.

She was having a complex feeling right now.

A mass of murderous qi rose from her but then disappeared, and then rose again...

"You goddamn master!" She gritted with her teeth while staring at Ye Xiao fiercely, with cold lights shining in her eyes.

She slapped on Ye Xiao's chest and shouted, "This is even uglier!"

- Puff! -

Ye Xiao actually regained his original appearance instead of Feng Zhiling due to that slap!

That slap actually removed the disguise of Ye Xiao, who was in a coma at the moment! Everything was turned back to the real position!

Ye Xiao was lying on the floor silently.

His pretty face looked pale and weak.

His chest rose and fall. He was breathing steadily, but he just didn't wake up.

The woman stared at his face, and the expression on her face was changing again and again.

Hate, anger, confusion...

There was also a sense of... affection.

"Master..." she murmured, but she didn't seem to notice what she herself was speaking.

And then she shouted, "Bastard!"

She looked furious!

That was loud enough to shock the firmament!

It had been cloudy but the clouds were all gone after that shout!

This woman in white was surely Bing-Er.

Hmm. Maybe she wasn't Bing-Er anymore.

Her memory was back. She was now the Prime Elder in Misty Cloud Place, the Demonic Lady in Qing-Yun Realm, the second most powerful cultivator in Qing-Yun Realm!

Xuan Bing!

When the fight just began on the mountain, Bing-Er sensed it in the cave. She knew that her master was in great danger...

Before that, her memory had hit her many times. If she would like to, she could have become Xuan Bing long ago.

She had been resisting the memory, because she didn't want Xuan Bing to wake up.

Deep inside her heart, she wanted to be Bing-Er.

Once Xuan Bing was back, she would never stay with Ye Xiao!

If she could choose, she would choose to forget everything about Xuan Bing forever. However, as the power inside her was recovering, no matter what she wanted, she would wake up as Xuan Bing sooner or later!

In fact, Bing-Er had used the power of Xuan Bing long ago without noticing. If not so, how could she freeze Boundless Saint and strike his soul with just one gaze. That was the power of Xuan Bing!

She had to force herself to wake up...

Because that was the only way to save Ye Xiao from the danger with her peerless strength.

However, Bing-Er would no longer exist when the memory was back...

[I don't want to...]

[I don't want to leave Master...]

[But if I don't go... Master will die...]

[I would rather let myself vanish to save his life!]

...

That was how Xuan Bing's memory was back.

However, the memory of Xuan Bing and the memory of Bing-Er merged together. It happened on this body, so it couldn't be wiped out!

This moment, she was staring at Ye Xiao, who was lying in front of her. In her eyes, there was more and more only complex feelings.

There were still two different personalities deep in her consciousness. They were fighting each other, but also merging with each other...

At one moment, her eyes would be full of affection, but in another, it would be filled with killing intent. It just changed again and again...

- Puff! -

Xuan Bing raised her hand and a mass of cold and dark light appeared in her hand. She looked fierce and vicious. "You ruined my innocence! You deserve to die!"

The hand was like thunder striking, emitting electric lights, slapping down to Ye Xiao's head.

...

# Chapter 667: Freak Out!

---

However, when her hand was so close to hit on Ye Xiao's forehead, she stopped.

It just created a strong wind that brushed against the hair of Ye Xiao. However, the hand just stopped right there. It didn't move a bit any further.

"I can't kill him..."

"Why not?"

"I just can't..."

She thought about killing this man, and an extreme pain hit her heart.

That pain made her feel speechless. She shouted to the sky again.

"Do not interfere me..."

"I didn't. I am you. It is you interfering yourself. It is your heart..."

The complicated mind status made this ultimate master cultivator feel like in a nightmare from which she couldn't wake up...

She finally remembered, but then she was lost in it. [What happened to me?]

[I have tried so hard to keep myself a virgin. This man took it from me.]

[In Qing-Yun Realm, I am the peak! But this man actually ended my virginity, this man who's weak like an ant.]

[How can I not hate him... but should I?]

[I... It seems... I was the one who went to his room... I went to his room and I... did that thing to him myself...]

Well, it was much more precise that she took his virginity than he took hers!

Before Ye Xiao had sex with her, he was a virgin too. Truly, it was not easy to say who took whose virginity!

That made her feel speechless!

Xuan Bing looked at the pretty face of Ye Xiao and thought of the fight he had just been through!

He had the capability to flee away.

If he did leave, this would not be so vexatious for her!

However, he kept fighting so hard just to keep her from being interrupted or attacked.

When he was hiding behind the shield of the Golden Soul Tower, he stepped out just because those men said they were going down to get her. He knew he would die if he stepped out!

Xuan Bing was great in martial art, however, she didn't know everything that happened up there. If only she knew Ye Xiao had planned to explode Golden Soul Tower and die with the enemies, and that he even was so close to finish the trigger...

If he succeeded, she would never be able to see him alive again!

If that had happened, no matter how tough she was, facing Ye Xiao's death, what would she think? She wasn't capable enough to bring a man back from death!

"I don't care what would happen after I die. I can't! That is after I die! As long as I am still alive, that is my responsibility!"

That was what Ye Xiao had said.

Now he truly gave up on his life to prove it. [I will protect my woman until I die!]

[That is my responsibility!]

Xuan Bing was looking at Ye Xiao. She didn't know what was the feeling in her heart.

The man seemed to have taken her virginity away, but he was also the one who loved her so much. She didn't know whether she should hate him or love him!

The only thing she was sure was that the murderous qi was fading away bit by bit...

[Do I love him more than I hate him? How... How is that possible? I have been living as Xuan Bing for so many years, yet that was only a few months life!]

[Why... Why can't I just kill him? I can't even make up my mind!]

She turned around stared at the sky. Her eyes were filled with confusion.

[What should I do?]

[Why me? Why would it happen to me?]

[Why?]

[Why would I lose my memory?]

She tried to operate the spiritual power in her body and then she bitterly smiled. She was not only recovered but also improved a lot. How was it possible to improve that much within just a few months? Simple reason. The divine punishment wound on her was completely removed from her body.

It was Ye Xiao who cured her from the hopeless damage...

"You should leave it be..." She bitterly smiled and made a long sigh.

[If I wasn't cured, when the divine punishment attacked, I would die for sure. I should have died for a long time now!]

[Even death is better than this dilemma...]

She deeply lowered her head. She didn't know what to think of or what she should do...

This was like a joke to her.

She was a conqueror in Qing-Yun Realm, however, in this low realm, she actually became a maid of such an ant...

And she was happy!

She was so happy that she... went to the man's bed!

And then... she became his concubine...

His concubine!

She enjoyed it. She got on his bed to warm it for him... And she took it as a blessing...

She waited so eagerly to be his concubine...

Concubine!

Concubine!!

The word showed up in her mind and she freaked out...

[I, Xuan Bing, the Prime Elder in Misty Cloud Place, I should almost be the No. 1 Cultivator in Qing-Yun Realm since my wound was removed!]

[Why the hell would I want to be this man's concubine?]

[And I felt happy and flattered for it...]

[Isn't this a joke that nobody would believe!?]

[Isn't it a completely unjustified thing...]

She covered her face with two hands. She felt extremely ashamed, like there were countless alpacas running over and over in her mind.

If that was known by all the others, she would rather kill herself than endure the shame...

That was so shameful!

'Concubine... Heavens! Prime Elder Xuan Bing became somebody's concubine? No joking?'

'Xuan Bing? Which Xuan Bing? Why isn't she your concubine?'

'Pah! You ignorant prick. Is there any other Xuan Bing in Qing-yun Realm? Anybody who dares to use that name?'

'Was! Xuan Bing? Xuan Bing of Misty Cloud Palace? Prime Elder?'

'Yes! Didn't I make it clear enough?'

'My god! Who is it? Heavens. What a capable man! Xuan Bing is

his concubine?’

‘Hey, listen. This man is extraordinary...’

‘How extraordinary?’

‘You know where he is from?’

‘Where?’

‘Land of Han-Yang! You know it?’

‘Land of Han-Yang? I really don’t. Forgive my ignorance!’

‘That’s alright. It is normal. You know Human Realm Upon Heavens right?’

‘Yes I do! Land of Han-Yang is beyond Human Realm Upon Heavens? Well then...’

‘Noooo! Land of Han-Yang is below Qing-Yun Realm. It is the lowest realm...’

‘Oh no!’

‘That man who made Prime Elder Xuan Bing his concubine is brilliant!’

‘How come?’

‘He is on top of Sky Origin Stage! He is almost breaking through the limit! Isn’t it cool?’

‘Ah? A man like that? Xuan Bing is his concubine?’

‘Weird things are everywhere. You wouldn’t know, but that Xuan Bing got on his bed herself and forced him to... do that...’

‘No kidding! Are you a novel writer or something? That is too xuanhuan!’

‘It’s true! It’s totally true. When I heard this, I was so thrilled that I nearly spat out blood!’

‘I... I am going to... throw up blood too... urhhh...’

...

# Chapter 668: I Am Off!

---

I Am Off!

Xuan Bing knew that if it spread out, things would end up the nasty! For sure!

If her rival Xue Danru knew about it, what would happen? She couldn't help thinking about it!

'Oy, oy, oy. What a shameless, filthy, dirty, indelicate sl\*t!'

'I still remember the day when you showed me your virginity mark. Where is it now? Where is your virginity? Pah!'

'Are you going to say you did not force the young lad? Truth is convincing! How can you deny it? You are totally shameless if you dare to deny! I really have to admire you! I admire you!'

Thinking about words like that, thinking about how awkward it was to face her rival Xue Danru, she covered her forehead and didn't know what to do. She was freaking out. She almost wanted to kill herself...

"You are just my destined plague..."

She looked at Ye Xiao on the floor and made a long sigh.

The killing intent in her heart had long vanished.

The next moment, she looked around and saw those headless bodies...

The raging murderous qi was rising up again!

This time, it was not against Ye Xiao! She didn't resist it anymore!

"Bastards! Two great sects huh? Two great factions huh?"

Murderous qi was coming out from her eyes. "How dare... how dare you... how dare you come interrupt my cultivation..." She tried to find a reason to vent the murderous qi.

"You goddamn pricks! You deserved to die!"

She stoop up all of a sudden, preparing to rush up to Qing-Yun Realm to kill the men in the two factions in Qing-Yun Realm...

However, she thought of something, so she stopped.

She turned around then looked at Ye Xiao.

Finally, she sat down, put her hand on his chest, then poured the pure spiritual energy into him...

When he was almost recovered, she tapped on Ye Xiao's forehead with her finger.

"Forget it. I don't want you to see me..."

Her face blushed. She watched his pretty face and said, "I... I am leaving. I am leaving for real this time..."

She walked away a few steps but then came back looking at him like she was never going to see him again.

Again and again, she finally couldn't stop herself from lowering her head to kiss on Ye Xiao's lips lightly.

Her pretty face suddenly turned red like flame. She looked around like a thief, making sure nobody saw this, and then felt relieved.

Her slim finger was touching him. She checked on the dan beads Ye Xiao gave her in the space ring...

The memory was refreshed in her mind. She thought of the moment when he put the dan beads into the bottle. He was so caring...

[Master, Bing-Er is leaving...]

[Pah! What Bing-Er... Hmm. My name is Xuan Bing after all. Just keep it Bing-Er then!]

[Anyway... You will never see me again in the future, I guess?]

...

After a while, a stream of white color rushed up to the sky like lightning ripping the sky. It flashed and then disappeared...

...

After a while, Ye Xiao woke up.

The moment when he opened his eyes, he felt something different. Hmm. Something very different...

[Wasn't I seriously damaged? Wasn't I dying?]

[Why...]

[My body is... energetic! Perfect! This must be my prime condition...]

He was lost in thoughts. He jumped up and felt confused.

[What is going on... Should I be surrounded...]

[Right!]

[I was fighting!]

[Where are the enemies?]

He looked around and found it empty around the mountain. He felt like it was a dream.

[Why isn't there any people?]

[What is this?]

[Where is everybody?]

[They are invincible in this world. How could they just disappear?]

It was silence around him. There seemed to be nothing going on.  
[Hmm... There. Something is missing?]

He noticed something strange. He checked on everything again more carefully. Finally, he found that there were some bloodstains on the floor. That proved a big fight happened earlier.

[There was a fight indeed. Somebody tried to wipe the trace. I

passed out because of the damage. A super powerful figure showed up and helped me. He killed Du Qingpeng and the others. Who was it that could be so powerful...]

He frowned. Apparently, he was confused. Suddenly, his face changed, "No! How is Bing-Er? That man killed Du Qingpeng and his men, but he might not keep Bing-Er safe... That...]

Thinking about that, he turned around and rushed down the top of the mountain like whirlwind. He rushed into the cave.

It was all normal in the cave. Nothing special.

The Soul Gathering Array was still there running smoothly.

The spiritual stones were there too. Only... Bing-Er was missing.

[Where is Bing-Er? Why is she gone?] He nearly went mad. [Was she kidnapped?]

[Wait... No. If they could take Bing-Er away, they wouldn't let me go!]

Ye Xiao looked around outside near the cave but found nothing.

He returned to the cave and sat on where Bing-Er should be. He force himself to be sober and think about everything...

No matter how he tried, he couldn't figure out what had happened...

He had been in coma when things happened. Even if he was awake, he should also be confused about what was going on with Bing-Er.

He sat there with a blank head. He looked forward and then suddenly shrank his gaze!

Suddenly, he rushed forward to the wall of the cave!

There were words on the wall?

‘Memory back... I am off...’

Just a few words. It was scratchy!

It seemed to be written on a capped area. Whoever wrote this must not be satisfied with the first writing, so it was sliced off and rewritten... again and again...

Those words were the final version after lots of times rewriting.

"Memory back? I am off?" Ye Xiao looked at it confusedly. He suddenly blanked out. "What does it mean? What is it?"

[The men are all missing. They are probably dead... Did Bing-Er drive them away? Did she kill them?]

[But... Bing-Er... She is so weak. How is that possible?]

...

# Chapter 669: Your Life; In My Arms!

---

"I can't understand. What is going on..." Ye Xiao felt headache. He had never felt headache about something like this in this two lives. He completely lost it, couldn't think through it, couldn't figure it out... it was totally incomprehensible!

"I am f\*cking going crazy!"

He held his head. "Memory back, you are gone... That is casual. That is cool. Fine. Even if you don't want to tell who you are, could you just tell me where you are off to? Memory back, fine. Not the key. The key is what is your name? Where do I find you?"

...

At the same day!

Land of Han-Yang was in chaos!

In the mountain where Sunlight Sect was located.

Suddenly, a solemn voice resounded in the silence, "Sunlight Sect have done unforgivable things. From now on it is rejected in Land of Han-Yang!"

That voice sounded cold and solemn. It sentenced the sin of Sunlight Sect and put all the people in Sunlight Sect to death.

It was overwhelming. It was unquestionable.

After that, clouds gathered beyond the mountain. It appeared as a huge palm and slapped the hell down on the mountain!

That palm covered the entire area of Sunlight Sect!

It was like a mountain hitting on a mosquito! It struck down!

The entire Sunlight Sect was smashed into ashes along with the mountain!

After two hours.

Starlight Sect suffered the same thing. A solemn voice resounded, "Starlight Sect... should be gone too..."

A huge palm hit down from the sky heavily!

Two palm hits, that was what the great figure did.

Two great sects were both wiped out thoroughly in the world!

...

Nearly everybody in the world heard that noise when it was happening!

The two great sects, Sunlight Sect and Starlight Sect, which had been in Land of Han-Yang for over ten thousand years, were torn up by one person in one day!

Even the mountains were vanished.

To describe it directly, the mountain where Sunlight Sect used to be in became flat land! There was not even a rock left there! All was smashed into ashes!

Sunlight Sect... Ahem. There was even no land left. It became a lake covering over a thousand miles!

It became a tourist resort, Moon Fall Lake!

Nobody knew how deep the Moon Fall Lake was... The trees around the lake had never changed within hundreds of years!

No matter what season it was, the lake was beautiful as ever. It was beyond the nature's rule.

Moon Fall Lake and the Boundless Ice Mountain were the two invariable great resorts!

It was at the same temperature all the year around and the trees

were always green. Other than that, there was another special scene.

Everyday when the moon rose to the sky, splendid star lights would appear in the lake...

It contrasted with the stars in the sky, creating such an incredible scene.

Stars in the sky, stars on the land, stars in the water...

That was why this lake had another name, Triple Star Lake!

It was said it was efficacious to make a wish in this place...

That was how it spread out and became famous... Naturally, it became a well known resort...

...

Sunlight Sect and Starlight Sect were vanished. For most of the people in the world, it was a shocking news. However, most of them remained unmoved. People in the world were mostly ordinary people after all!

There was one thing some people were curious for though.

Sunlight Sect and Starlight Sect, it was over ten thousand miles between the two places.

However, within half a day, the two of them were ruined!

Were they both destroyed by one person? Or two people did that?

If there were two, each of them should be at least as powerful as Bu Jingtian at his prime time!

That was almost beyond the limitation of this world. It was hard to imagine, but it was imaginable!

What if there was only one person? Then that person was unimaginably powerful!

It was beyond Han-Yang people's recognition!

When the two steles were found, people finally got the answer.

There was a small stele in where Sunlight Sect used to locate in. Also, there was another in Starlight Sect.

The steles were really small. The markings on them were totally the same.

‘You don't let me laugh; I will let you cry!’

Those were the markings.

Same words on the steles.

Somebody exterminated two great sects and left two small steles. They were both small and hidden. It was not that easy to find. Whoever did this must not want people to know it.

However, it didn't make sense. The best way to not be found was to leave nothing. Why would he leave two steles if he didn't want them to be found. It didn't make sense.

Somebody started to make a guess. 'This peerless figure has schizophrenia...'

In fact, no matter how people guessed, there was no conclusion. There was no evidence to support any conjectures. The only thing that was confirmed was that the two sects were vanished within one day by one person!

Many people had the same thought after reading the words. [What a prick. You exterminate them already... Even the mountains are swept... Even if they wanted to cry, they couldn't...]

...

Ye Xiao couldn't accept the truth. He looked around the entire ice

mountain again and again, but still couldn't find Bing-Er. He searched till midnight and then the next morning. He just found nothing.

In the morning breeze, his face was covered by frost. He stood on the mountain, looking at the hole on the top.

That was the only thing left beside the two lines in the cave!

[What does it mean? Bing-Er suddenly became invincible? She jumped up and broke the top of the mountain? She rushed out and killed those men herself?]

[Maybe she did, or maybe she didn't. It doesn't matter!]

[What matters is that Bing-Er is gone missing!]

[That is the point!]

After a while, he stopped.

He sighed in grief and said, "In the wind of ice and coldness, I spent the night to be with you for the first time. For half a year we cuddled in warmth; for two hundred days we were in love. Who wants to leave in the morning; we can only keep each other in thoughts every night to come. I would rather break the firmament just to hold you in my arms for the rest of your life!"

That was the story between Ye Xiao and Bing-Er. He turned around and left without hesitation.

It seemed he had totally put Bing-Er down now.

Only those who truly knew Ye Xiao knew that he just kept it deep in the bottom of his heart.

He wouldn't mention it again.

But it didn't mean he forgot it!

He disappeared in the mountain for a long time.

Suddenly, something appeared in the air.

A white figure showed up, standing at where Ye Xiao was standing earlier. She was elegant and charming.

...

# Chapter 670: Who Are You?

---

She looked at where Ye Xiao disappeared without saying anything. She sighed.

"In the wind of ice and coldness, I spent the night to be with you for the first time... Ah..." The beauty in white looked sa., "Isn't it the day when I was fighting Xue Danru... I fell to this world... I should have died, but it turns out to be a new beginning of my life!"

"For half a year we cuddled in warmth; for two hundred days we were in love..." She blushed, gritting and murmuring, "You playboy... How could you say such shameless thing..."

"Who wants to leave in the morning; we can only keep each other in thoughts every night to come... Humph. You are grumbling... You actually think that I will miss you too... Humph... I won't!"

"I would rather break the firmament just to hold you in my arms for the rest of your life... You little prick. Though you are weak, but you have an arbitrary mind! I am underestimating you!" Xuan Bing gritted her teeth with a red face. She stomped on the floor. "What? Do you want me to be your concubine?"

"You actually... want to... hold me in your arms for the rest of my life... Can't I go somewhere else but only stay in your arms? You evil man! You really talk big... Break the firmament... Humph... So you would like to break the firmament to find me?"

"Humph... I wonder how you can break the firmament! Even if

you do want to do it, are you capable enough?"

She humphed and was ready to leave.

However, with no reason, she stopped for a long time, staring at the footprint of Ye Xiao on the floor. She got down and reached her beautiful hand to touch it...

It took her quite a while!

"I should leave!" She made up her mind again. Finally...

Her face turned cold. It was clean like ten thousand years old ice. In her eyes, there was only coldness. She was like an unmelting ice mountain standing between heavens and earth.

- Boom! - A mass of dark fog suddenly rose up and covered her white pretty figure.

As the dark fog disappeared, her clothes became all black. A silk mask appeared on her face.

As her shout sounded, a black figure rushed up to the sky!

This time, she didn't even look back. When she rushed to the clouds, she paused for a second. And then she turned into a widely spreading dark cloud. The frightening coldness filled the entire world.

Her pretty hands reached out and ripped out a crack in the space.

She rushed in without hesitation!

However, when the crack was sealing, she couldn't help looking back.

After that, she disappeared in the sky.

[Qing-Yun Realm! I am back!]

She was gone. She left Land of Han-Yang, leaving two drops of crystal tears falling from the sky.

...

When Ye Xiao got home, Song Jue felt weird. He asked, "Where is Bing-Er? Why is she not with you? You two are in honey pot lately. It is strange that only you show up!"

Ye Xiao blandly smiled. "Bing-Er's memory was back. She left... I will go find her when I go to Qing-Yun Realm. We have a long life to be together. It is unnecessary to rush."

Song Jue slapped on his own leg and said, "I knew it! Bing-Er! Such a pretty girl! Ordinary family can never raise a girl like her! Tell me. Which family is she from?"

He was so curious.

Ye Xiao laughed. "Uncle Song, Bing-Er asked me not to tell you. You have a big mouth!"

Then he got in his own place and shut the door behind.

Song Jue was shocked. He watched Ye Xiao enter the room. After a while, he was enlightened and said, "You little prick... You keep it a secret from me? I have a big mouth? Look at your face. You act like you have found a treasure. Of course. I knew it. She must be a lady from some noble family. You are lucky! Humph! Fine. Don't tell me. I don't care..."

Then he left with his hands on the back.

However, he was worrying. [I hope... Bing-Er's family... is not of some powerful clan! I don't want to see Ye Xiao being a fool like his dad...]

However, he didn't know Ye Xiao had his back on the door with his eyes closed.

His mind was in a mess. Although he was living a second life now, he still couldn't get through this peacefully.

There was still the smell of Bing-Er in the room. However, she

was gone...

Ye Xiao took in a deep breath and then made a long sigh.

Bing-Er was gone. He decided not to let Uncle Song worry with him. He would bear the sorrow and concerns himself...

He knew Uncle Song liked the little girl. Bing-Er was like a daughter to him. Otherwise, why would he care about her so much. He even lowered himself to be her practice target. Maybe he did it for Ye Xiao, but he also liked Bing-Er!

Ye Xiao stayed on the door for a long time, until he completely calmed down.

However, his eyes were closed. He was lost in thoughts. He was going through every detail of what had happened. He wouldn't want to leg go of any possible trace.

[I was surrounded... And then I was knocked out... They came to kill me for the first place. Since I was in a coma, they should kill me immediately. But I am still alive...]

[That means... Maybe Bing-Er's memory, along with her overwhelming power, were back to her at that exact moment? So... She came out and kicked them all off... or maybe killed them all...]

[If it wasn't Bing-Er, no matter who else did it, I would have felt something left there. I couldn't see, but I could sense it. I couldn't

only feel Bing-Er other than the twelve men. That was familiar, powerful and strong. It was exactly how Bing-Er should be.]

[The words on the wall... That was so smooth. I am sure it was Bing-Er.]

[But why didn't she stay? Her memory was back, so what? She could drive away or kill all those men. She must be powerful. Those were not the reasons for her to leave!]

[If it wasn't the recovery of memory and strength made her leave, there is only one possibility. She has a special background. Is she a significant figure?]

[When she remembered everything about herself... she couldn't face me anymore?]

[So she had to leave?]

[So she didn't wait till I woke up...]

[Then... Who is Bing-Er? It is marvelous that she could put Du Qingpeng and the others down by herself. However, that was to judge with the standard of Land of Han-Yang. In Qing-Yun Realm, it shouldn't be anything special. It just doesn't prove anything...]

He frowned as pain overwhelmed him.

...

# Chapter 671: Is It Still Necessary to Ask Who?

---

[But... No matter who she is... No matter what she is... I am sure, she must be... in Qing-Yun Realm!] Ye Xiao took a deep breath. He looked decisive. [That's enough. I don't care who you are, where you are. I will find you!]

[When I find you, the first thing I will do is to spank you! Humph...]

He made up his mind, and so he smiled, "As my concubine, where do you think you can go? That was turning the heavens over..."

...

At that night.

There were three breaking news that arrived at Chen-Xing City.

First... Ye Nantian conquered the north and killed into the grassland. Thirteen groups of his army wiped out thirteen tribes in the grassland. Wherever they went, all living things were swept! Not even grasses could survive!

There was no more Grassland Wolves in the hundreds of thousand miles of northern grassland!

Billions of the grassland folks died because of that!

When it came to the city, it shocked the city!

The entire Land of Han-Yang was shaken by the might and ruthlessness of General Ye!

Second... Not a good news. The king of Kingdom of Lan-Feng, Wenren Jianyin, crashed the west line of Kingdom of Chen. Six hundred thousand soldiers of Kingdom of Chen retreated thousand miles back. Wu Gonglie, the Commander in the west, died fighting for the kingdom. Wenren Jianyin led millions of his men and marched into the central region.

Wherever he went, mountains and rivers turned into ruins!

Zhan Qianshan from Kingdom of Tian-Yu boosted his attack, keeping Prince Hua-Yang Su Dingguo's army restrained. He couldn't go help the west.

Kingdom of Chen was falling in shock!

The third... was also shocking. It was not only for the Kingdom of Chen. It shocked the world, especially people in martial world. It was astonishing. The two most powerful sects in the Land of Han-Yang were thoroughly wiped out within one day! Even the mountains were slammed!

Hundreds of thousands of the disciples in the sects were dead!

Everything was in ashes!

The first two news shocked the kingdoms in the world. The last one astonished the martial world the most.

Everybody knew that the two great sects were enemies to Feng Monarch of Ling-Bao Hall. Now, they were wiped out!

And... they were wiped out just after Master Bai of the House of the Chaotic Storm left!

They remembered what Master Bai had said before he left. That was a sign. People couldn't help having the same thought. [When Master Bai was here, forces in the world were in a balance. Because he is powerful enough, Feng Monarch didn't do what he wanted. That was why the two sects could stay this long.]

[However, Master Bai is gone. Feng Monarch has nothing to fear. He just struck out and destroyed the two strongest sects in the world at once!]

[To think deeper... Nobody has seen Feng Monarch in Ling-Bao Hall for days. He didn't even show up in the auction!]

They had been wondering where Feng Monarch had gone for real. They didn't understand why he was absent in such an important event...

However, now they thought they got the reason. [Feng Monarch did it himself. He destroyed the two great sects!]

Ye Xiao would be flattered if he knew people had such thought. [That is overestimating me too much. Within one day, vanish two great sects which are ten thousand miles away from each other, make the mountains into flat land and lake. I really am not that capable. Not to mention me now, even when I was at my prime in the previous life, I might still not be able to do that. Maybe I could, but not that well done!]

That was the most possible conjecture people could think of, and it made the martial world fall into silence.

Nobody dared to even talk about it at night. They really didn't want to piss off Feng Zhiling and get killed.

Somebody tried to get something out of Wan Zhenghao's mouth. "I wonder... where has Feng Monarch been?"

Wan Zhenghao, while holding his belly, maintained his smile and said, "I am not allowed to ask about it really. I have no idea..."

Long Tianyun asked Wan Zhenghao cautiously, as a friend to Wan Zhenghao, "Did Feng Monarch... do that... to the two sects... because of fury?"

Wan Zhenghao shook his head. The fat on his face kept slapping on himself. "No! Absolutely not!"

He did it in quite an extreme way.

If he said yes, Long Tianyun might not totally believe it. However, Wan Zhenghao denied it so drastically! Long Tianyun was sure he lied!

Long Tianyun thought he knew the truth now, so he laughed. "Boss Wan, calm down. Come on. Hahaha... I don't... I absolutely believe every word you said."

Wan Zhenghao half closed his eyes. "You know it."

"I do." Long Tianyun laughed.

The two great sects were vanished.

Some of the rest of the martial sects were still powerful than the noble clans, but not that much. Long Clan was obviously becoming more and more influential. It was recognized as the No. 1 clan in Land of Han-Yang!

Besides, it was so close to Ling-Bao Hall now. Who dared to mess with the five noble clans?

That was why the union of the five noble clans were the most powerful force in the world.

Long Tianyun returned to his place and the other four host masters gathered over to him. "What is it, Brother Long? Did Feng Monarch do that?"

Long Tianyun thought for a while and then spoke in a weird tone, "Wan Zhenghao denied it in a drastic way... And then he told me three words strangely... He said 'you know it'!"

"You know it!"

The other four host masters took in a cold breath. "Feng Monarch definitely did it!"

"That's right. I think so." Long Tianyun took a deep breath. "Feng Monarch didn't deny it, but didn't admit it either. He just let us guess. It means he did."

"Feng Monarch is leaving Land of Han-Yang. He is a man of honor and dignity. Before he leaves, he would definitely eliminate the people who may hurt the ones he cares about. He surely would kill all his enemies. The biggest threatening forces were definitely the two great sects."

"They both have developed for so many years. Even though they were seriously stricken, after Feng Monarch leaves Land of Han-Yang, Ling-Bao Hall may not be able to restrain them both. That is why Feng Monarch decided to wipe them out once and for all."

"He won't admit it. Not that he didn't dare to. There is nobody in

the world who can threaten him anymore. However, Ling-Bao Hal has to exist here for the future. When he leaves, Ling-Bao Hall will surely fall back badly."

"It is not a good thing to put Ling-Bao Hall on the edge of the storm. He would rather stay low and give us the fame as the strongest."

"Ling-Bao Hall will only be an organization... that manipulates things."

"That is what Feng Monarch wants."

...

# Chapter 672: Soul Power!

---

"In fact, since Wan Zhenghao said those words, I guess Feng Monarch told him to. That was why he wanted us to attend the auction... That means he wants us to rise up and be the line of defense for Ling-Bao Hall!"

"Otherwise, Wan Zhenghao wouldn't dare to tell us that!"

One of the host masters took in a cold breath, "Master Long... You mean... Feng Monarch knew the House of the Chaotic Storm would be gone long ago. He had long decided to do that after Master Bai left. Feng Monarch has prepared it for a long time? How could he think so far!"

"Think about it. Feng Monarch is the only recognized rival of Master Bai. If Master Bai is a god to people, what is his rival? There is no other possibility."

Long Tianyun took a deep breath. "I don't want to see Feng Monarch as a god, but I can't deny that he is already a god in our eyes! We can't resist it!"

The others took in a cold breath.

They thought of the days when they nearly had a death and life fight against this god... They felt their hearts were beating a bit faster...

If Long Tianyun didn't choose the right position at that moment, they would definitely be opposite to him! That meant they would have died long ago!

They thought about it and felt grateful to Long Tianyun even more.

Things were always so wonderful.

Sometimes, when a man was hiding without doing anything outside, as long as his social position was high enough, people would connect him to everything that happened outside, especially those great things.

That was what happened to Feng Monarch.

Feng Zhiling had definitely been cultivating with Bing-Er during that time.

That was the only reason why he didn't attend the auction.

However, big events happened during that time... the House of the Chaotic Storms no longer existed. Feng Monarch was the only one that everybody recognized as the most powerful figure.

Two sects were vanished. If not Feng Monarch did it, who else was capable to?

At least in people's heart, only Feng Zhiling had the capability to do so!

Then it was him! Confirmed!

That was where the beautiful mistake came from!

Feng Monarch's fame shocked the world!

He and Ye Nantian became the two peerless slaughtering god in Land of Han-Yang!

One slaughtered in military area, while the other slaughtered in the martial world!

They both made the world tremble because of their fame!

However, Feng Monarch was more famous than Ye Nantian. Much more!

Ye Nantian was a general after all. What he did, he did it with hundreds of thousands soldiers. Feng Monarch wiped out the two sects and killed over a hundred thousand people, and also smashed two mountains!

Nobody knew that they were actually father and son!

One day.

Something was moving in the Boundless Space. It seemed on edge.

Ye Xiao entered the Space and was shocked by what he saw.

The medical materials in the Space was increased a huge amount because of Wan-Er and Xiu-Er. Brother Egg had grown a lot too because of that. Now, it was almost double the size of a watermelon.

Ye Xiao looked at it and found that there was one more layer of cracking clouds on the surface.

However, it seemed still in need of one thing...

"@\*£\*(&!£\_(!\_)!+)@!++&\$(\*^%..." Brother Egg seemed very anxious.

Ye Xiao had been with Brother Egg for quite some time now. He didn't understand what it was saying, but he understood it from the mind of it.

"You want energy of livings? Soul power? The soul that came out when Gu Jinlong died?" Ye Xiao frowned.

"..." Brother Egg confirmed it.

Ye Xiao asked more questions, until he finally figured out everything.

Brother Egg was about to hatch now. It only needed enough soul power to hatch!

It hadn't been lacking of soul power before since it had absorbed the energy from Gu Jinlong's death.

Gu Jinlong was a vile man, but he was level three of Dao Origin Stage. Brother Egg absorbed his soul power so it didn't need more of it afterwards. However, as it was about to hatch and it used up Gu Jinlong's soul power long ago, it needed more of it, so it asked Ye Xiao for help!

Ye Xiao had been waiting so long for the day Brother Egg hatched. However...

"You mean... You need more soul power. Like the soul you ate last time? I will be damned. Where the hell do I find such a thing for you? He was a Dao Origin Stage cultivator. That was simply a coincidence. I can't do that again just because I want to!" Ye Xiao felt headache about it.

Brother Egg was jumping up and down anxiously. Soul power was essential for Brother Egg to hatch, but it was the power of one's living. That was not something easy to get!

Brother Egg needed a huge amount of that power. Three Gu Jinglong's souls might still not be enough. Gu Jinlong's soul power equal to tens of thousands of ordinary men's. That meant Ye Xiao had to at least kill a hundred thousand people for Brother Egg!

When Ye Xiao realized this, he truly felt pain in the head. He never thought he was any noble man, but to kill a hundred thousand innocent men just for his own interest? He wouldn't do it!

Ye Xiao was lost in the puzzle. Brother Egg kept jumping around. A lot of information came to Ye Xiao through mind connection again!

Ye Xiao sensed it and was surprised. "What? The power you need is all around the world? Lots of it? Floating everywhere? More and more will come everyday? You must be kidding me. Are you telling me lots of people will die everyday? Hmm... Wait a minute. That is true... War is everywhere. The war! We can gather a huge amount of soul power in battlefield!" He was enlightened.

It was close to impossible to get the souls of cultivators like Gu Jinlong. However, quantity made up for quality loss...

...

He finally had a plan. The next thing he did was to talk to Song Jue and then go to Zuo Wuji's house for help.

When Ye Xiao left Zuo Wuji's place, Zuo Wuji was silent. He just kept pacing around while frowning.

Then he went to Prime Minister Zuo.

He had a long conversation with his grandfather till it was midnight.

Finally, when Zuo Wuji thought it was workable, he took a long breath of relief, murmuring, "This... shouldn't be hard!"

...

# Chapter 673: Recommended Ye Xiao!

---

Everyone in the court was anxious and worried badly for the Kingdom of Chen.

The war and the civil strife were both going to an end. The north was luckily settled, thanks to Ye Nantian. They could go help the other three sides now. However, the collapse in the west broke it down!

That was one disaster after another.

Things were just turning better for the Kingdom of Chen, but then it all became dangerous again.

Ye Nantian's troops were still sweeping in the grassland. Even though he wanted to return, it would take no less than one month.

The east was in a fever. Su Dingguo and Zhan Qianshan were of equal strength. Neither of them would give in a bit. Su Dingguo couldn't send anybody to help for sure. If he forcibly did, the east battle might fall. That was not a good thing.

General Lan was in the south. It was stable in there, but they were too far away to help.

The collapse in the north led to the invasion of Kingdom of Lan-Feng's million iron heels. It would take them less than half a month to get deep in the central area of the Kingdom of Chen!

They were marching towards Chen-Xing City!

If the capital was conquered and the king was captured, what was the point of the victories in the other three sides?

It had to be stopped in the west!

The only problem was, all the generals who could lead an army were out for war. There was no other men to use.

The king frowned. He watched the officials busy proposing useless suggestions. His face looked darker and darker.

[Should I go myself?]

[How many soldiers can I command even if I do go out for the fight?]

[We are empty now...]

The other kingdoms had manpower but lacked of money. Kingdom of Chen was the other way around. There was plenty of money, but no soldiers anymore. One could never make a fist without a hand. However, the problem was that there was no 'one'!

At the moment, Zuo Wuji, who had been standing in the corner,

looked at the king like he wanted to say something but didn't dare to.

He was in the inconsequential position in the court. He had no official post, so nobody would want to listen to him...

However, the king was interested. He saw that Zuo Wuji have something to say, so he asked, "Wuji, do you have anything to say? The kingdom is now open to every capable man. If you have any suggestions, just say it!"

Zuo Wuji stepped out from the crowd and said, "Your majesty, the enemy is on the way to invade us. We don't lack money or food, and we can figure out a way to gather more soldiers. What we lack of is a commander! I want to recommend one person. As long as this man goes, Kingdom of Lan-Feng will surely be knocked away!"

The king's eyes lit up. "Who is it?"

"The young lord in Great Northern General's House, son of Ye Nantian, Ye Xiao!" Zuo Wuji said, "As long as Lord Ye leads an army to the west, the crisis will be solved."

"Nonsense!" Before the king talked, one of the officials scolded, "Zu Wuji, you are talking nonsense here, kid! Do you think it is a game here? How dare you recommend a foppish useless young lad to lead the army!"

Zuo Wuji smiled but didn't argue.

The others thought Zuo Wuji must be scared, so they all started to censure him for not being serious about the kingdom's future.

The king's eyes lit up!

Others wouldn't know, but the king knew well about what Ye Nantian's sworn brother Song Jue was capable of. He was a peerless cultivator who could rush out and take off the head of the leader among millions of enemies!

Royal martial artist Master Sun had once told the King that Song Jue was surely stronger than all the royal martial artists. Those men were all in Sky Origin Stage. Master Sun was nearly reaching the top of Sky Origin Stage. If Song Jue was even stronger, he must be as powerful as a legend!

Zuo Wuji recommended Ye Xiao, but the king knew that he was in fact reminding him of Song Jue.

As long as Ye Xiao went to the battle, Song Jue would have to go with him in order to protect his young master!

As long as Song Jue went to the battle...

He would slam it all!

How could Wenren Jianying be a match to a god?

The king pretended to think carefully about it and then said, "Ye Xiao... may be a proper option though..."

The officials who had been scolding Zuo Wuji were all shocked.

[Proper option?]

[What's wrong with you, my king!]

[Ye Xiao? The head of the 'three lords in town'? He nearly died earlier. Can he truly even get to the battle with his weak physical condition?]

The king looked at Zuo Wuji, and the latter also looked back at him and spoke in a low voice, "As far as I am concerned, Steward Song is a good friend to Feng Monarch of Ling-Bao Hall..."

Only the king heard him clearly, and so it was decided.

The king's eyes lit up. He was happy. "Great! That's it! Decree! Confer title of nobility on Ye Xiao as the Western General! Assign one hundred thousand soldiers under his command, and have him march to the west to fight the Kingdom of Lan-Feng!"

That definitely astonished everybody in the court!

Nobody knew that the king would announce a decree like that without consulting anyone!

"Please think twice of it, your majesty..." A few officials kneeled down on the floor with tears down. "It concerns the safety of the entire kingdom. Please give it a second thought, your majesty..."

The king waved his hand and said, "It is decided! No more discussion. I believe Ye Xiao will be like his father. He will stop the invasion and crush Kingdom of Lan-Feng!"

The officials looked at each other with confusion.

[Who gives you the confidence?]

[Just because he is the son of Ye Nantian? He is a useless young lad...]

[Do you think he can be as good as Lan Langlang? Do you really think he would return to the fold?]

No matter what, the king was adamant on his decision. Lord Ye became a general who led an army!

Everyone thought it was ridiculous.

Only two men had faith in it.

One was Zuo Wuji. He knew who Ye Xiao really was.

The other was definitely the king. He didn't care if Ye Xiao was capable enough. The only thing he knew and he was glad about was that Song Jue would be with Ye Xiao!

The king had seen how Song Jue killed like a god in the battle when he was still fighting with Ye Nantian. He felt relieved about it!

When Ye Nantian sent Song Jue back to be a steward, the king felt sorry about it...

Such a peerless fighter was sent back home to be a steward...

That was a waste...

Surely, the king knew that he was not only a steward, but also Ye Xiao's guard. He was the strong protection of Ye Xiao! It was a pity, but it was helpless.

Now that the kingdom was in danger, it was a perfect plan to force him back for Ye Xiao's sake.

It was better to be done sooner. The king made a dictatorial decree and also made fast arrangements on it.

When the decree arrived, the tiger token was handed over too.

The next was to gather soldiers together.

It was also busy as hell in the House of Ye at the moment.

...

# Chapter 674: Ye Xiao! Commander Ye!

---

Song Jue saw the precipitate decree. He didn't even have time to start cursing the king, when he suddenly discovered that his nephew had long been ready to go. He was even expecting it!

"You are going?" Song Jue stared at Ye Xiao.

"No." Ye Xiao spoke in a deep voice, "Not me. We are going."

Song Jue staggered and shouted, "That is the battle! You know nothing about that sh\*t! You think it is a game? No matter how well cultivated you think you are, you will be chopped into pieces in the battlefield! You get it?"

"I do." Ye Xiao smiled. "I am not so strong yet, but I got you. I am fearless as long as you are with me..."

Song Jue was pissed.

"Uncle Song." Ye Xiao turned solemn. "I have my own reason to go to the battle. Besides... father has done his work in the north. That means he has fulfilled his promise to the king. He will leave at any time. However, Kingdom of Chen is still in troubles from outside and inside. Father will never leave this kingdom at this circumstance. I have to cut off the last thing that concerns him. That is to solve the problem in the west."

"Only the west?" Song Jue humped. "What about the east? Your

father-in-law is fighting there. Don't you want to help him? And the south? Can you just leave Lan Langlang like that?"

"The east should already be settled. Also the south. But I won't stick my hand in it if not necessary." Ye Xiao smiled. "Soldiers realize their values only in the battle. If there are no enemies outside, then there will be fights inside the kingdom. Soldiers can't win the fights inside the kingdom. Prince Hua-Yang will be restrained because his fame may cover the influence of the king... That is why there has to be an enemy out there for him. It is the same in the south."

"Besides, I am in an important process of cultivation. Only one step ahead and I can break Sky Origin Stage and reach Spirit Origin Stage! But I don't have any rivals here now..."

Ye Xiao looked at Song Jue miserably. "There were two great sects, but... somebody just wiped them out so overwhelmingly... The assassins of Boundless Lake actually quit the martial world to be rich men... Look at me now. I want to have a life and death battle with somebody, to be enlightened in the moment of life and death, but there is none. The only place that suits me is only the battle out there..."

Song Jue twisted the mouth. [What? This is your reason?]

The two great sects were gone. Ye Xiao was having complicated feelings about it.

The two great sects had been a big threat to him.

He had planned to see them as a sharpener, so as to sharpen his sword.

However, he was wrong about them. They were not just a sharpener.

They actually sent for people in Qing-Yun Realm!

Those that could kill him within seconds!

He couldn't defend against them at all.

If he didn't have East-rising Purple Qi, Brother Egg, or the Golden Soul Tower, he would have died long!

He felt that he had learned a lot since he was reborn.

He had been fighting from the lowest position, with the experience he had from the previous life. What he had been through really helped him a lot in improving himself. However, there were still lots of things he couldn't see.

[There is no absolute, no matter what it is, unexpected incidents will happen. I can't be stubborn.] Ye Xiao warned himself. [You want them to be your sharpener, but... they want to be much more than a sharpener... They are so tough that they can break the sword. That will be the end of the sword's life!]

[Who... Who killed the two sects? Was it Bing-Er?]

Ye Xiao smiled. [Her memory was back and she might be powerful like what she was like before. But I didn't sense any energy flow there... She must be much stronger than when she was with me, but it was still too difficult for her to do such a big work.]

[But... Who was it then?] Ye Xiao didn't think Bing-Er could do it, but he couldn't think of anybody else. [Somebody in Bing-Er's clan came?]

He couldn't figure out a thing.

It remained a puzzle in his heart...

"Is there any other reasons for this?" Song Jue asked.

"Sure. I got a solid source. We need to leave Land of Han-Yang within three months!" Ye Xiao solemnly spoke, "The tunnel will be sealed. It will be impossible to go between two realms by then... Once it is sealed, those who stay in this world but don't belong here will be vanished!"

"That is the rule of firmament. It is unchangeable." Ye Xiao was being gloomy. "I may be able to break up to the upper realm, because I will reach Spirit Origin Stage from Sky Origin Stage. That is a natural ascending. You and father have to leave before that! In fact, I urged Bing-Er to cultivate, because I want to ascend

with everybody! I don't want any trouble to happen here while you are all gone!"

"Are you sure? Tunnels will be sealed?" Song Jue turned anxious.

As a high level Dream Origin Stage cultivator, he knew what it meant!

That was a cleanup of the forces beyond limitation in all realms.

As long as the Almighty Nature recognized one as a balance breaker, he would be vanished!

It would clean off all the powerful cultivators who stay in where they shouldn't!

That meant, if a cultivator's power was beyond the limitation of the realm they were in, they should leave for the higher realm. Nobody would have the chance to be domineering in the realm for weaker people!

If anybody still wanted to stay, both the physical body and soul would be vanished!

"We have to do it quick! Let's finish all this and leave! As soon as possible!" Song Jue sweated hard. He said, "Let's go!"

And then he said, "I will do some arrangement. I need to write

your father a letter. He needs to know about this. This is some serious sh\*t! Right, bring the Blood Guards with us!"

He then walked away, not waiting for Ye Xiao's response at all.

Ye Xiao thought, [It turns out Uncle Song can be terrified too...]

...

Lord Ye was wearing a white robe. His eyebrows were like swords and his eyes were like stars. He sat on the chair of commander!

He looked exactly like a great general though.

It was the third day after the decree was announced.

Also, it was the day they marched for the battle!

One hundred thousand royal soldiers. They were the last protection of the capital. The king was putting everything on this...

Kingdom of Lan-Feng was marching hundreds of miles a day towards the center of the Kingdom of Chen. There was no time for a ceremony now.

Ye Xiao took over the seal of commander and held the sword of

commander. He was now the commander of the army.

"Your thrilling words, Commander!"

That was a necessary process. They couldn't skip it. The army had to listen to the commander's admonitory talk before blowing the horns and march into the battle.

Ye Xiao didn't hesitate. He stood up and jumped up high. When he got down, he stood on a flagpole!

How high-profile! The king and the officials felt it was awkward!

[What the hell... That is embarrassing...]

[He is standing right on the flagpole of the commander flag!]

[That is the most important thing!]

[Nobody in the history dared to step on the commander flag...]

[It is a taboo!]

[He actually just jump up on it, that little prick!]

[What is he doing?]

...

# Chapter 675: Military Law; White Flag!

---

Ye Xiao never knew it was a taboo at all. He had no experience of this. He just felt good to jump up high and acquire a further view.

He stood on the flagpole, as wind blew his clothes up flying in the air.

He suddenly felt himself so cool and powerful.

Song Jue was speechless. [You look like a salted fish in the wind... How could you be so arrogant.]

"Today, I am here, account my rule to you. There is only one clause!" Ye Xiao humped and then shouted to the hundred thousand men, "Whoever violates the law in my army, dies!"

"I am sorry, commander, what is the law you mean?" A general was confused.

[Isn't it too much of an abstract saying?]

There should be many articles of a law, and there should be more than one penalty method...

"I mean, from now on, whoever violates anything in the military law will only get the penalty of death!" Ye Xiao humped. "Don't you understand?"

All the generals were speechless.

[We have seen people who talk abstractly, but none more than you do. So you mean whatever one is charged, he will have his head cut off?]

That was exactly what Ye Xiao meant.

It was simply stated to the point. He just set the baseline of his rule with just a few words.

It was decisive and overwhelming.

It allowed no argument.

He said it, and it was decided!

As expected, a wave rose in the crowd.

Some of the soldiers used to be a part of the four legions. They didn't feel inimical to this. It was a special time for the kingdom. Military law should be strict anyway. Ye Xiao just wanted it to be stricter and that was all. They would just walk the talks. It was the important time that concerned the future of the kingdom!

The soldiers of the four legions were almost all in the four front lines. However, one of the sides was broken. Enemy invaded into

the kingdom. If the kingdom kept retreating, it would definitely fall. If they fought hard, they might win the battle. That was a hope. If soldiers couldn't even obey rules of the military law, how could Ye Xiao command them like an arm commanding fingers of hand?

This army was newly built. Most of the soldiers were from the Royal Guardian Troop. They were all arrogant and selfish pricks. If the law wasn't strict, honestly, these men would not fight in a war.

However, some people agreed while some others would definitely disagree. Some soldiers who were from influential families were annoyed when they heard it. Any of them had powerful backgrounds. That was why they could still stay in the city. Those who didn't have a powerful dad were all sent to the front line.

They stayed in the city to avoid getting killed in the battle. However, now they couldn't. They had to go for the war now. They were already full of grudge. Now as they heard Ye Xiao announced this, they burst!

They burst together with anger!

"What is this sh\*t? Military law means military law! You can't just say whatever you want to replace it! That is such a joke!"

"Only one penalty in military law? Chop off the head? So if I made a wrong pace, my head is off? What is this sh\*t? You just want us dead. Just say it!"

"That's right. Before the Kingdom of Lan-Feng arrives, we will all die. Who could possibly survive such a stupid rule?"

"This is nonsense! Do you even know how to rule an army? You think the army is your property? You want to rule it by your own words?"

"Are you out of your mind? How can you say such nonsense!"

"No matter what, I quit! What I like is to violate the stupid rules! Does it mean I will be chopped dozens times per day?"

"I won't agree!"

"I won't do it either!"

"Whoever loves to follow such rule, go ahead! I don't buy it! I don't think Ye Xiao dares to chop my head!"

...

As Ye Xiao announced his rule, the crowd burst into clamor. The soldiers of those influential families stared at Ye Xiao with grudge in their eyes. They wished they could swallow him in one bite!

[I am born a noble man. Now I am going to fight with these doggery in the battle! That is a depressing thing already! Now you make a rule that makes me feel much more depressed!]

[It won't work. I am telling you! We won't follow it! What can you do? What do you dare to do?]

[We are going to violate the law! We have already done it.]

[Are you going to kill us all?]

[Do you dare to kill us all?]

All of those men were thinking!

The officials who disliked Ye Xiao already because they didn't want him to be the commander of an army gloated. [The law does not punish numerous offenders. Hundreds of the noble born men are shouting against you. I wonder what on earth you can do to solve this!]

[Execute one as a warning to others? There are hundreds of them. You can't mess with them. You can't mess with any one of them. They are all the 'others', that you can't execute!]

[Do not think that you really are a commander just because you sit on that stupid chair.]

[Slush can never be pasted on the wall.]

[The head of the 'three lords in town'? How typical!]

[Hmm. It turns out only the head of the three lads fits the stupid title all along!]

If it wasn't Ye Xiao, but any great generals in the kingdom, such as Su Dingguo, General Lan, Ye Nantian, this might only end by the commander taking a step back. In fact, those generals would never set such a rule in the army.

However, Ye Xiao was the one who played the main role here. He was the one who set that rule.

He feared nobody in the world. He didn't put anyone in this world in his eyes at all!

That made it a different story now.

Ye Xiao apparently had predicted such situation. He half closed his eyes and spoke with a smile, "So... Listen to you. You won't follow my rule, right? You are violating it now. That is what you are doing, right? Well. I am nice and generous. Let me ask you one more time before anything is done. Take that as a chance I give to you!"

"We don't need it. Who could stand such an unreasonably strict rule? That is beyond nature and law! We don't need to obey it!" One man was getting more and more arrogant since Ye Xiao was smiling.

He was son of the Penalty Minister. His father was watching this on the side. He thought that he was safe because his father was there. That was why he shouted with arrogance and confidence.

As he made the first objection, the other over four hundred men shouted together, "That's right! We won't obey it!"

Ye Xiao didn't feel annoyed at all. He just nodded. "Hmm. You won't. Fine. Guys! Bring me a big vat and a big white flag!"

[What?]

[A vat?]

[A white flag?]

...

# Chapter 676: Unwavering Slaughter!

---

[White flag?]

[What? What is going on?]

All the others felt confused and amused. [This prick actually prepared a white flag before marching for battle? What is he doing? Is he going to f\*cking surrender when he just becomes a commander here?]

However, as Commander Ye gave the order, there were people who followed, even though there were many didn't! That was reasonable. There were many of his own people in the troops.

After a while, a huge vat was placed in front of the main flag. A white flag was on the way too. The flag was specially made. It was known that the main flag in the army should be the biggest one. However, this white flag was even bigger than the main flag—three or four times bigger!

It was all white like snow.

The others saw the white flag and felt joyless.

[God damn it. That is too ominous!]

[Everybody wants a good sign before marching for battle. Look at

that white flag. To hell that is a bloody good sign!]

Ye Xiao was calm and blandly spoke, "No stupid things should be done over three times. I will kindly give you another chance. Who said that they won't follow my order?"

"Kindly my ass! I don't need it! I said it!"

"I did! What?!"

"And me too!"

"Me too!"

"I did too!"

...

Before Ye Xiao finished talking, those young lads from influential families stood out and stared at Ye Xiao fiercely. Apparently, they were thinking, [We all stand out here and what could you do?]

"Good! I gave you two chances. You didn't want any of it. Fine. Nothing to say more!" Ye Xiao nodded. "We are about to march out for battle, yet some of you violated my order and stirred disturbance in my army. They should be beheaded! Go! Get them all! Do not let any of them get away!"

Suddenly, a group of men holding axes and swords stood out from the crowd getting over to those young men without hesitation.

"Ah! What do you want?"

"How dare you!"

"Ye Xiao, how dare you tie me up?"

"Bodacious! How dare you?"

...

The executor group had no more than two hundred men. It was even less than half of the young men who had been shouting against Ye Xiao. However, each of them were cold blooded and vicious. They were like mountains while standing still, but like wind when they moved.

Some people knew that they were exactly the assassins group of Ling-Bao Hall.

The leader in the group was exactly Liu Changjun.

They were the executor group now, also Ye Xiao's private troops!

Liu Changjun was wearing service uniform. He looked valiant and heroic, but in a cold and vicious way as an assassin.

Whoever dared to resist him, he just kicked and knocked him out!

The young men were much more in number, but they couldn't withstand a single blow in front of a group of professional assassins. After awhile, they were all tied up and fell on the floor. However, they weren't reconciled. They still kept shouting evil words against Ye Xiao.

"Commander!" Liu Changjun made a cupped hands and reported, "All the offenders are taken! Please give your order!"

"Disturb the army. Violate my order. What more should I say? Cut their heads off!" Ye Xiao blandly spoke while standing high and straight.

All the others couldn't believe it. They all kept their eyes widely opened while looking at him.

That was much more a shocking move compared to what he had done just now!

Cut them all?

Just like that?

Over four hundred and sixty noble born young lords! Some of them were the only sons of some families!

[How could you give such an order?]

[How dare you?]

Everybody was shocked.

Zuo Wuji, who was standing beside the king, covered his own face.

He knew what Ye Xiao would do when he took down all those young men. However, he couldn't say anything to stop him. He could just pray, [My heavens! Please, my great Ye Xiao. Do not do that! That is not a joke...]

Apparently, Ye Xiao didn't hear the voice in Zuo Wuji's heart. He just did it...

Zuo Wuji felt like freaking out now.

[I thought I am the bodacious one here. I recommended you to be the commander. I worked so hard to make you the commander, to lead the army. Yet the first thing you do is to offend all the officials in the court... In an unforgivable way...]

[What the hell do I owe you so much that you would do this to me...]

[I recommended you!]

[You are going out for war and I will stay in the capital for the rest of my days! What do I do?]

[You don't care about the officials in the court, but I do! My god! Please, my great brother, what the hell are you doing?]

Not only Zuo Wuji, but also the king was shocked. He raised his hand to grab his own beard...

He even moved his head forward a bit. [Really? Are you really going to kill them or are you just bluffing?]

Well, the assassins wouldn't wait.

They didn't hesitate. Unlike the others, they were the ones who should get this thing done!

Liu Changjun bowed. "As ordered!"

And then he grabbed a young man beside him and his long sword was out from the scabbard. - Blink! - As the cold light flashed, a head rolled off on the floor. A stream of warm blood erupted to the big vat!

The assassins all followed their leader. The cold lights of swords flashed everywhere. One head after another was chopped off and rolled onto the floor. Blood erupted to the vat!

All of a sudden, the vat was filled up with blood. The blood flooded out and became a small hill on the floor.

Only within seconds, four hundred and sixty-five young men from those influential families became dead bodies. No exception!

That was unwavering slaughter!

It all happened within seconds. Nobody was able to stop it during such a short time.

Liu Changjun and his men were all professional assassins. They were a bunch of the most powerful assassins who killed like daily exercise. Each of them only killed about two men. That was leisure and easy! They wouldn't hesitate at all!

The ground was suddenly filled with the smell of blood. All the others were pale on the faces. They were quivering.

[He did it...]

The king's face turned pale immediately!

[Ye Xiao... is... too bodacious!]

[He is too egregious!]

[Those are sons of the officials! Noble born!]

[How could you just kill them all!]

[It would be fine if you just kill one or two of them to set a sample! How could you kill them all!]

[This is going too big now!]

Minister of the Penalty Ministry was on his way to the king.  
"Your majesty! This is not one people's fault..."

He didn't finish what he wanted to say, such as 'law can not punish numerous offenders', before he saw his own son being grabbed off the ground and chopped on the neck. His son's head just rolled on the floor. Totally dead.

Minister of Penalty was astonished. He was trembling in the wind like a falling leaf. Suddenly, he exclaimed, "Cheng-Er... Ah..."

Then he fell down on the floor.

Surely, he was not the only one. All the other lords around were

exclaiming their dead sons' names!

The king was quivering as the exclamation filled his ears and touched his nerves.

...

# Chapter 677: Marching For Battle

---

Commander Ye stopped being calm and steady now. He showed a domineering attitude as he shouted at the soldiers who were all in silence, "Who else? Who else wants to test my order? I shall give him the chance to try!"

It was silent. Even the sound of a needle hitting the floor could be heard!

The soldiers kept standing straight and tight up.

"Whoever dares to violate my orders will end up the same like these men. No exception! None!" Ye Xiao humphed. "I am in charge of this army. I am going to save the kingdom from collapsing, to save lives from battlefield, to save families from being torn apart. I don't have time to teach you lessons! I will kill! That is the only thing I will do! Who dares to test, go ahead!"

He shouted, "Somebody come bring my big brush pen!"

[Brush pen?]

[Vat, flag and then brush pen?]

[What is he doing?]

Nobody dared to make a sound. No matter how confused they

were, they didn't dare to say a word. They just looked at Ye Xiao.

Ye Xiao held a huge brush pen and dipped it in the vat. He swayed his right hand and the big white flag was tiled on the floor.

He swayed the huge brush pen with blood as the ink to write on the flag!

Five words!

‘Lord Xiao, Kingdom of Chen!’

The clean white flag became a flag written with blood.

He stuck two flag poles together and raised up the flag with blood. It replaced the main flag and rose up to the highest point. The smell of blood spread in the air. The five red words were flying fiercely in the sky!

The new commander's flag appeared! The flag that only belonged to Ye Xiao!

Everybody who saw the flag was shocked. Their eyes were filled with fear.

None of them had thought that this man of the ‘three lords in town’ was actually such a murderous figure!

He was fearless and unruly!

It was true that all the three lords were some significant figures in the world!

Lan Langlang, Zuo Wuji and Ye Xiao! They were all outstanding figures now!

- Neigh... -

The horse loudly neighed, breaking the silence. A black horse ran out with Commander Ye in white robe on the horseback. He shouted, "Drums! Go!"

- Tuck, tuck, tuck... -

Hundreds of drumbeats echoed at the same time like it was the last time they sounded!

The drummers didn't dare to beat any slowly, because they didn't want to get their head chopped off!

The drumbeats shocked the sky.

It was drumbeats for marching, also drumbeats for victory!

The entire city was filled with drumbeats.

It was shocking the sky and the earth, shocking people's hearts!

In another side, the officials were running towards the king. "Your majesty... Your majesty... Please... You must hold justice for us. My son died in grudge..."

They were all moaning with tears.

However, as the drumbeats were too loud, it covered their voice!

The king only saw the officials talking with tears in eyes in a painful expression. However, he didn't hear a word of them.

Ye Xiao was already rushing out in front of the army.

The soldiers on the horse shouted and ran out after him!

The entire army was tidy and refreshed. It was a good force.

They moved in the shape of a ship one by one!

Everybody was trying so hard to show their best status to satisfy their Commander Ye. They didn't want to get killed.

The officials ran out to stop the army like mad men. They shouted, "Ye Xiao, stop! You can't just leave... You..."

The drumbeats were so loud. Ye Xiao couldn't hear them. Even if he did, he wouldn't care. He glanced over them and passed by on the black horse!

He totally ignored them!

- Puff! -

His face was solemn. He just kept running ahead. One of the officials were stepped beneath the horses' steps. The army was running over!

The official became a flat pile of meat on the floor!

Hmm. He became a part of the nature now!

"Victory!"

Ye Xiao swayed his sword and shouted loudly!

"Victory!"

The one hundred thousand troops shouted back to him in their loudest voice!

The entire world was shocked!

The army was like a long iron dragon rushing out the ground. It was like a fierce and vicious long dragon that was thirsty for blood rushing out far away!

In the sky.

Ning Biluo was holding the huge flag. It was about forty meters high, flying in the sky!

White flag!

Blood words!

The dense smell of blood made a blood storm in the air!

An army of riffraffs was formed into an iron army by Ye Xiao right before marching for battle!

He didn't even say any inspiring words.

He just refreshed their minds with blood and heads of those young lords and built the soul of his army with it!

The army was marching forward like the breaching of dam. None of them even saluted to the king!

The ground fell into a mess already.

The officials moaned for the loss of their younger generations in the families.

"Your majesty, please announce the decree! Please take that monster back for penalty!"

"Your majesty, please hold justice..."

"Your majesty... sob, sob, sob... That was my only son..."

...

The king was having a headache for it.

He was helpless and embarrassed.

[Get Ye Xiao back?]

[Impossible.]

[Punish him?]

[No!]

[Penalty Ministry? Absolutely not!]

The king himself had led soldiers to fight in the battles before. He knew that Ye Xiao had converted his army into a fierce and powerful iron army now. Even experienced army couldn't be better than the army Ye Xiao was leading now.

The Kingdom of Chen was losing the war. They needed an army like this to rush out and fight hard.

If he had Ye Xiao return now, the army would be destroyed and become a bunch of riffraffs again.

That was ruining the last bit of hope!

If he didn't get Ye Xiao back, what should he do to comfort the officials. [What should I do after that little prick killed so many people?]

He couldn't do anything to Ye Xiao at the moment, but he truly didn't know what to say to his officials!

...

# Chapter 678: I Faint!

---

Ye Xiao was carrying an important task right now. He couldn't be interrupted. His uncle the steward was utterly powerful, so it was impossible to hurt Ye Xiao. Besides, Ye Nantian was too powerful to mess with too. However, the king didn't think those were good reasons to explain to the officials!

There was only one option left then.

"What? Guys? What is it?" The king acted confused, "It was too loud... I can't hear it. I guess I am old really. My ears are useless..."

"What? What did you say..."

"Wait. No. I am going to faint off..."

The king covered his ears like he couldn't stand the drumbeats anymore. He rolled up his eyes and then got down on the floor immediately.

He happened to 'faint' down in Zuo Wuji's arms.

He was out.

"Your majesty, you..." The officials were scared to death as they saw the king faint away. They all looked at the king.

Naturally, they coincidentally saw Zuo Wuji holding the king in a rattled way.

Eventually, it reminded them Zuo Wuji was the one who suggested all this. Their eyes turned red. "Zuo Wuji! You..."

One of the old officials stared at Zuo Wuji fiercely like he had killed his entire clan. "If you didn't recommend that murderous prick earlier, my son would never..."

"True! Zuo Wuji! You! You deserve to die!"

"Zuo Wuji! It will never end between you and me!"

"Zuo Wuji!"

Zuo Wuji apparently became the scapegoat. He really wanted to cry, but he was also admiring. [Brilliant move, your majesty! You actually get away like this. You think the officials are all fools? If you really fainted, those royal martial artists would fly over to you. None of them did anything. You are faking. You are absolutely fine. My god. Please open your eyes, guys! He is sober!]

...

The king pretend to faint in Zuo Wuji's arms. He felt lucky. [Phew. Luckily, I have passed out. I don't need to respond to that. How practical to lay all that on Wuji...]

However, no matter whether he truly fainted or not, no matter whether the officials believed it or not, nobody dared to just ignore the King!

Some of them hurriedly called the royal physician. The physician got over and did lots of things, but couldn't bring the king back to himself. [I won't open my eyes no matter what the hell you do...]

At this moment, a giant bang sounded from the west gate of the city!

The city was shaken again. It was much more shocking than the previous one. It felt like the earth was cracking apart.

"Hmm? What is it? What happened?" The king didn't pretend anymore. He hurriedly asked.

Somebody arrived and reported to him with fear and confusion.

"Commander Ye's flag is standing too high... It couldn't get through the gate standing up. He asked his steward, Song Jue, to hit a hole on the gate... That steward just slightly waved his hand... He just waved his hand and the entire wall collapsed down... We are running unprotected on the west now..."

The officials looked at each other and didn't know what to say anymore.

[Heavens my lord!]

[How bodacious he is! You haven't even touched the enemy, yet you have killed over four hundred men of ours and destroyed one gate of our kingdom...]

[What kingdom the hell do you think you belong to?]

[What kind of f\*cking things are you doing here!]

[And you just... just lead the entire army out for the fight...]

[Who is that steward Song Jue? I have never heard about him at all. How could he just destroy a wall by slightly waving a hand? That... That is beyond human's capability! What if he waves his hand on us? Will we be blown away?]

When the officials were all thinking in their hearts guessing about it, they heard a voice.

"God damn it! Bastard!" the king shouted and then passed out.

He fainted again and fell in Zuo Wuji's arms again...

This time, he wouldn't open his eyes anymore...

Because it seemed he truly did pass out this time!

The martial artists hurriedly gathered around and escorted the king back to the royal house!

It was a question in Zuo Wuji's heart that the king passed out the second time though!

Did he really pass out, or was it another trick to fool the officials?

It confused Zuo Wuji, the most valuable Prime Minister in the Land of Han-Yang for a whole life!

...

Ye Xiao's army was like a whirlwind rolling ahead. They were out of the city now!

They were marching so fast towards the west!

The army was exactly like a black long dragon, moving on the earth from Chen-Xing City directly to the west battle!

It was much easier for cavalry to march so fast, but the infantry marched no slower. The soldiers did try their best and were showing the most insistence.

Commander Ye promised he would cut off the head of whoever violated his order!

Would they violate his order if they were left behind?

Nobody dared to ask.

They just kept following up with insistence. They decided to do it with the biggest effort they had.

It was nothing worse than death!

Truth proved human's potential was unlimited.

After five days, they reached Iron Peak. Nobody was left behind.

Well, three soldiers died trying to stay with the troops though.

Ye Xiao wasn't surprised at all. He wasn't moved either. [People die in war. The three soldiers died catching up with others. Then they will surely die in the battlefield too.]

He knew that he should have no mercy for them at this moment.

It was the army!

It was war!

It was a test of iron and blood!

Life or death was decided in an instant! He should not waste time to think too much about other things!

Iron Peak.

It was a special place. It was a pivotal location for the army. If the enemy broke through this place, there would be no defense against them in the Kingdom of Chen. It was the last defense line to keep Kingdom of Lan-Feng away. It was about fifty-five hundred miles away from the west front line in the kingdom!

It was the edge of the central region of the Kingdom of Chen!

...

# Chapter 679: Iron Peak

---

The west battle was a disaster for the Kingdom of Chen. The commander in the west, Wu Gonglie, stayed sober till the end. He fought so hard to slow down the army of the Kingdom of Lan-Feng, so as the west battle was extended to the Iron Peak. However, if Iron Peak was lost, the Kingdom of Lan-Feng could just strike deep directly into the heart of the Kingdom of Chen. Nothing could stop them.

Iron Peak was in a terrible situation. Soldiers were panicking!

At the most dangerous moment, an army from Chen-Xing City eventually arrived!

It only took Ye Xiao five days to lead the troops to Iron Peak from the day he became the commander!

Time mattered in war!

The army arrived like a whirlwind.

The soldiers of the kingdom of Chen standing on the Iron Peak watched as their brothers arrived.

They were all injured, but still unswerving. Their eyes were still sharp and fierce. They looked casual, willing to die at any second. However, there was also a sense of sorrow.

They were Great Western General Wu Gonglie's soldiers.

After all the fights in the battles, these men were all tough like iron!

Now, when they saw the army coming to help, they were moved and inspired.

"The kingdom actually sent an army to help within such a short time! Heavens do bless our kingdom!"

"They move so fast! Impressive!"

"Listen to their steps! It is like thunders!"

"Look at the dust rolling up to the sky!"

"What an excellent army!"

"They are above excellent! How is it possible to be so powerful like iron?"

"I can't believe we have such an army in the kingdom! I think the Northern Army of General Ye is no better than this!"

"I wonder who is leading this army?"

A vice-general was thrilled.

They looked at each other. Apparently, nobody knew the answer. They couldn't think of anybody who was proper for this job. Prince Hua-Yang was fighting Zhan Qianshan in the east. General Lan was defending the south. Besides, none of these two was able to lead such a powerful army. Ye Nantian was capable enough, but he was in the north. The Northern Army was exactly such kind of army. However, they were hundreds of thousands of miles away. It was impossible that they would come to this place. In other words, none of the three great generals was able to lead this army.

Then who was it that made these men into such an iron army?

They didn't know how to even make a guess, but they knew that this man must be extraordinary!

When the army was getting closer, they saw a huge flag moving over like it was sticking to the clouds in the sky!

They looked at it and then felt speechless!

"God damn it! Why a white flag? What the hell is this?"

A general frowned and shouted, "Which stupid prick brought these men? F\*ck! White flag in the battle? Is this preparing to surrender?"

"There are words on the white flag... Black words? Red words? It

should be red at the beginning! What the hell is that?"

After a few days, the blood words had become black color!

A vice-general watched for a while and then said, "The words... Lord Xiao... Kingdom of... Chen?"

He turned over with a confused face. He rubbed his head and said, "Who is Lord Xiao in the Kingdom of Chen? Do you know about this man?"

The others were all confused. Of course not.

Nobody knew who this Lord Xiao was!

People knew about Lord Ye, the head of the 'three lords in town', but nobody even dared to link it to that young foppish stupid lord!

"No matter who he is, he is here to support us. That is a strong army. We have hope! The Kingdom of Chen has hope!" The general immediately made a decision, "We should go greet them! Do not show any neglect!"

"Yes!"

"They come so fast. It is right about time. If they arrive a few days later, we may all die in this place. They are here giving us great hope!"

"That's right! Our brothers cannot hold it any longer soon."

"I wonder how General Sa feels now?"

"General Sa lost both his legs. When he woke up yesterday, the first thing he wanted to do was to get on the wall and defend the attack. When he realized both his legs were gone, he exclaimed and spat out blood. He passed out again and is still in a coma. Medic said he was stricken both physically and mentally. I am afraid..."

"Gosh..."

...

Somebody had arrived at the gate already. He was shouting, "Commander Ye leads the great army here to support. Soldiers on the wall, open the gate right now!"

Before he finished, the gate was opened. Soldiers and generals with smell of blood and fire walked out. They were all wrapped with bandages, on the head or the arms. Blood stained their clothes, but they still looked fierce.

As they just stood there beside the wall, it was already a moving and tragic scene.

Apparently, the western battle had been so tough for the soldiers.

Song Jue looked at them and felt gloomy about it.

He hadn't been in the battle for a few years because of his disease. However, he was quite experienced. He knew well about the soldiers in the Kingdom of Chen.

When the western army marched to the battle, they had six hundred thousand men. Most of them were capable figures. Song Jue knew over a hundred names among them. There were also soldiers he had seen before. Song Jue knew at least a thousand generals in the western army!

However, besides the generals, there were also vice-generals that Song Jue used to fight together with. It was no less than ten thousand men including generals and vice-generals.

Now there were only... less than three hundred men standing there to greet them!

Some of them were vice-generals according to their clothes.

Whoever stood there to greet them must be the leaders of the current troops!

That meant there were not many generals left in the western army now!

Song Jue shouted loudly to the sky. It shocked the entire area.

The army stopped right there tidily as Song Jue shouted.

Song Jue rode over to the gate by himself.

"How come just this amount of people? Where are the others?" Song Jue asked. He could guess the truth, but still wanted it not to be true.

A middle-aged man with a square face looked at Song Jue. His eyes turned red and were filled with tears. He held the tear and spoke with sob, "They are gone. All gone. Our brothers... are gone in the fight..."

Song Jue was shocked.

...

# Chapter 680: Tragic War

---

Six hundred thousand men, thousands of generals.... All died in battle...

Song Jue wanted to say something, but he didn't. After a while, he just sighed to vent all emotions and slightly said, "Brothers have suffered..."

The middle-aged man gritted with his teeth but his eyes were red. He quivered and then finally couldn't hold it anymore. Tears fell down.

He stepped forward and suddenly held Song Jue tight. He burst in tears!

A man barely weeps, unless he truly grieves!

The middle-aged man with a square face was the vice-commander Zhu Chenggong. He was sworn brother to the departed Western General Wu Gonglie.

At this moment, this tough man, who had lived most of his life in the battle, who had never cried, who had survived countless fatal dangers in the war, cried like a child with tears.

He never feared death.

He looked down upon men who wept.

However, at this moment, in front of Song Jue, he couldn't suppress the sorrow in his chest no more. Tears covered his face. He cried out the emotions out of his chest.

Ye Xiao watched all this. He could only sigh deeply.

"Great General... died fighting in the battle..." Zhu Chenggong loudly cried, "Six hundred thousand brothers. Less than one hundred thousand left! Seven thousand hundred generals in Western Army, two hundred and forty survive..."

"We have been holding up on this. We have been fighting for this moment. We have been waiting for you to come and avenge the Great General! To avenge the departed brother! If it fails..." Zhu Chenggong exclaimed to the sky with tears on the face, "I, Zhu Chenggong, will die in grudge!"

"Revenge!"

Over two hundred generals who survived shouted at the same time. They were shouting with the last bit of power they had. They were shouting with their lives and souls!

"Our great Commander Wu must be watching us from heavens!"

The Iron Peak burst into shouts!

All that were left in the Western Army responded to the generals.

They were all showing face with tears!

In their eyes, there were wild glow of fierceness!

"Don't mind me asking. What is going on with this battle?" Song Jue was experienced in battles. He used to be a capable general in the army. He frowned and asked, "Wu Gonglie, Great General Wu was a specialist in battles. He might not be as good as Wenren Jianying, but not that much. If he kept holding the defense, I don't think Wenren Jianying was able to break through you. Why? How come you suffered such a big crackdown? This is unreasonable!"

Zhu Chenggong gritted his teeth. "There was a traitor!"

Song Jue and Ye Xiao urged him to tell the story and he did.

Wenren Jianying came close and Wu Gonglie knew he was fighting a stronger man in this battle. However, he didn't show any weakness. Without hesitation, he chose to fight directly.

The two leaders on both sides were famous generals in the Land of Han-Yang. Wenren Jianying was the second while Ye Nantian was the No. 1. Wu Gonglie was far behind them both. He was obviously weaker than Wenren Jianying!

However, to have a stronger commander was not enough to win a battle. Wu Gonglie was weaker than Wenren Jianying in all aspects except defense!

In fact, not only Wenren Jianying, all other famous generals in the world could not be better than Wu Gonglie in defense!

Ye Nantian once had a comment about Wu Gonglie. "He is normal in offense, but perfect in defense. If I am going to defeat him while he is defending behind the wall, I am going to fail!"

That was such a high praise. Ye Nantian was known as an invincible war god. He had never lost one battle since he became a commander. However, he gave Wu Gonglie such a comment. That proved a lot about Wu Gonglie's great defense capability!

The western battle was exactly a defense mission for Wu Gonglie. Wenren Jianying led millions of people to attack and Wu Gonglie defended with six hundred thousand men. He was short in number, but he had the wall to keep the enemy away. He actually did keep the wall standing firmly and tightly.

No matter what Wenren Jianying tried, Wu Gonglie just kept holding it behind the wall. He wouldn't open the gate and go out. No matter how dangerous the situation was, he held it tight eventually.

Enemy came, he held; enemy left, he wouldn't go out.

The wall was high and he was occupying the upper hand. No matter how capable Wenren Jianying was, he couldn't break the perfect defense.

As long as Wu Gonglie could keep them out and hang on long enough, he would eventually win the battle!

Wenren Jianying did many things trying to lure him out, but Wu Gonglie just ignored everything.

He then asked his men to humiliate Wu Gonglie by shouting evil words, but Wu Gonglie was indifferent.

However, Wu Gonglie had to send people out to escort the fodder and food outside the gate. That was a strong armed group of warriors who went out for it. Both sides won some fights on that.

Wenren Jianying sighed. "Wu Gonglie! Wu Gonglie indeed! He would rather give up all the glory... What a tough man..."

While the situation was going to a deadlock, something happened inside the Western Army.

One of the generals actually killed the guards and opened the gate late at night.

Wu Gonglie's men noticed it and killed that traitor, but Wenren Jianying's army had occupied the gate!

The two sides had to start a tough fight inside the city.

The Kingdom of Lan-Feng had more soldiers and tougher men. Wu Gonglie led his men to die fighting, but failed to take the gate back from Wenren Jianying.

Wu Gonglie knew that they couldn't win this. He had to give up on the city and retreat to another spot.

However, Wenren Jianying wouldn't let him. He had tasted enough bitterness on Wu Gonglie's defense. He wouldn't let him go! This was the moment he worked so hard for to set the provocateur into the Western Army.

He kept tracing Wu Gonglie and didn't stop and rest a bit. That was crazy. He would rather sacrifice for it.

There were a few more tough fights afterwards. Wu Gonglie had done everything he could but still failed to escape the attack. At the end, he had to lead one hundred thousand men to stop the enemy, so that the other four hundred thousand men could survive.

Western Army lost their base and suffered a great loss.

Wu Gonglie was seriously injured many times. He was exhausted both physically and mentally.

He had no city to hold and no wall to use. He had to keep fighting while retreating, trying to stop the enemy! He knew he had no more city to hold now and he was short in number. He knew he would be defeated soon. He couldn't stop the million troop of Wenren Jianying. However, he just wanted to hold the enemy's pace as long as he could! So he and the men under his command were fighting with their lives at the end!

...

# Chapter 681: Imposing Manner of the Losing Army!

---

The Western Army didn't have as much manpower as the Kingdom of Lan-Feng. Under the overwhelming and sharp attacks, the losing Western Army couldn't hold it anymore. They retreated and retreated. Wu Gonglie was definitely great in defense. Even in such a negative situation, his troops still stayed calm and stable. They kept striking the enemy from time to time, making sharp hits to Wenren Jianying.

Western Army should be able to hang on one or two more months, even though they would lose eventually. However, something else happened!

While they were retreating, more strong soldiers arrived for Wenren Jianying on the other side.

It was the princess of the Kingdom of Lan-Feng arrived with her men. She and Wenren Jianying attacked Wu Gonglie from two sides.

The princess brought with her the Western Army's failure. Things were done at that moment!

Wu Gonglie knew that he would definitely lose soon as the enemy had more strong men coming over. He made a crazy decision. That was the most dangerous and risky decision he had ever made in his life. That brought an end to this fight!

It was simple. His plan was to let the enemy come deep to somewhere and then blow the entire area up. To make sure the enemy took the bait, he decided to be the bait himself and fight till the end.

Vice-commander Zhu Chenggong led the army and retreated. When Wu Gonglie lit up the explosive, everybody cried with tears.

Destruction of good and bad alike!

The mountains collapsed.

Three hundred thousand people from both sides died in the place, Pair Wolves Pass!

What disappointed Zhu Chenggong was that...

Many men from Kingdom of Lan-Feng died there, but it didn't include the Prince of the Kingdom of Lan-Feng, Wenren Jianying, nor the princess.

Wu Gonglie died, but lots of soldiers in the Western Army survived. He left the spark for the coming defense force with his death!

After that, Zhu Chenggong led the army. They escaped the attacks from Wenren Jianying until they reached the Iron Peak!

They couldn't retreat no more!

It was the last defense line of the Kingdom of Chen. If this place was taken over, nobody could save the kingdom!

The Kingdom of Lan-Feng was gathering their biggest force and preparing for a final strike to win the war.

Ye Xiao had led the one hundred thousand army into the Iron Peak while the generals were talking.

What could be seen was the image of dead bodies all around.

The soldiers were all severely damaged, but their eyes were fierce and sharp, like starving wolves in the snow land!

'I am going to bite you hard before I die!' That was what they show imposingly. It could be easily felt from everybody's eyes!

They all stayed beside the wall while taking care of their wounds. They helped each other, without saying anything!

Something was rising up in their hearts! It was a strong feeling! An emotion!

Ye Xiao saw a senior soldier. His wounded arm was bleeding. It was deeply wounded. He just ripped a piece of cloth from his clothes by his mouth and placed it on the arm. He grabbed the strip

of cloth with the other hand and held the other end of the cloth with his mouth. Then he fiercely raised his head to tie the wounded arm to stop the bleeding.

He trembled. There was sweat on his forehead. It must have hurt so much, but he didn't even blink. He moved the left hand, which was the wounded one, and then grabbed his sword again. He swayed it, gritted his teeth, and then stabbed the sword into the floor.

He was satisfied, so he leaned on the wall and had a rest.

Ye Xiao knew that the cloth could only stop the blood for a while. The blood would eventually gather there. Once the cloth was soaked, blood would burst out and he might die because of it. That senior soldier apparently knew it. He just had no other choice. As long as he could still move and sway his sword for the current moment, he felt good!

To sway the sword meant he could fight!

Nothing else mattered!

"Brothers! Our kingdom sent us help!" Zhu Chenggong shouted, "Guys, salute! To Commander Ye!"

The wounded soldiers heard it and all stood up immediately.

They stared at Ye Xiao and saluted.

Some of them were seriously damaged. As they raised their hands, the wounds burst. Blood came out, but they still stood straight up without moving a bit!

Their stared at Ye Xiao and his men without saying a word!

They survived from mountains of dead bodies and oceans of blood. They had no admiration to anything or anybody at the moment!

No matter how powerful an official was, how close one was to the king, how honorable one used to be, they didn't care.

They only cared about one thing!

Only one thing!

Who was Commander Ye? Could he lead them to victory and avenge their departed Great General?

They were watching Ye Xiao with eagerness with eyes like wolves and eagles. Ye Xiao felt his blood boiling in the chest. He loudly spoke, "I am going to say this to you! I will lead you back to the front field! I will lead you back there and avenge Great General Wu Gonglie!"

"HOOOO!!!"

The crowd burst with a long shout. The wounded soldiers saluted again and shouted together, "Avenge the Great General!"

"For the Great General!"

"Revenge!"

Hundreds of thousand men shouted at the same time with all their power.

Their voice rushed up to the sky. The strong momentum of their grief suddenly filled the entire world!

Ye Xiao didn't say much. He wouldn't. Only a few words and that was all. He got the support from those tough wounded men in Iron Peak!

Wasn't it unbelievable?

Wasn't it awesome?

That was the truth!

Song Jue looked at him in disbelief. He felt like he knew less and less about his nephew.

What Ye Xiao did in the capital a few days earlier was bodacious!

Chopping off over four hundred young lords' heads at the same time. The soldiers must be happy to see it. [Those young lords. They just stay in the capital doing nothing. We are splashing our blood in the front line and they are enjoying in the city. And they are in a higher positions than us! They can do whatever they can. Why the f\*ck should we stand that!]

[It feels so good to see them die!]

At least most of the soldiers appreciated it!

Besides, as those young lords died, many soldiers had opportunities to get promotion. How could they not like it?

...

# Chapter 682: It Is Him?

---

At the very least, not to mention the inducement Ye Xiao made to them, which normal soldiers didn't fear Ye Xiao, a man who even dared to kill that many young lords at the same time?

Nobody dared to violate his order ever since!

Because of that, within the shortest time it required, this army became a iron army.

After a few days practice on the way, they were full-fledged.

It was still too early to say whether they were strong enough or not at the present, but as long as Ye Xiao was still there, none of the soldiers dared to commit desertion, even if they would lose the battle. They would only die in the battle, but never fled from the battle!

It wasn't because Ye Xiao had a persuasive personality. The rest of the western army would follow Ye Xiao with loyalty because of the promise!

The promise Ye Xiao made in Iron Peak!

To avenge the departed Great General!

One promise, he conquered the wild hearts of those tough guys!

These guys wouldn't want any other things. All they could think of was to revenge! They wouldn't even think about building their achievement for themselves or to simply survive the war!

Ye Xiao gave exactly what they wanted!

He promised he would take them to revenge!

He was powerful! He was commanding a powerful army to help!

The wounded soldiers all felt grateful for it! They all appreciated this Commander Ye!

He threatened the soldiers a few days earlier and then moved the heart of the tough guys now. Different methods, but he got the same response! Loyalty!

"Well, I guess my nephew isn't just a normal figure now..." Song Jue rubbed his lower jaw and murmured, "Like father, like son. So it is."

Zhu Chenggong heard Ye Xiao's promise. He felt relieved. He felt like a huge burden was taken off from him. He even felt a bit floating on the feet. He tried to keep his manner and led Song Jue and the others into the building. "Please, this way. Commander Ye. Brother Song... We have prepared food in there. It is raw, but... it is enough to fill the stomach. We soldiers can never leave food behind."

They walked fast into the building with firm strides.

Zhu Chenggong held Song Jue's arms and secretly asked him in a low voice, "Brother Song, how can you put on the war suit again and return to the battle... And... May I ask who this Commander Ye is? What is his background? Hmm... Well it doesn't matter who he really is, I guess. What he just did proved that he's good! He is so young. I truly cannot think of anyone in the younger generation in our kingdom who can be this good! Impressive!"

Song Jue felt so proud hearing it. He felt even better than somebody praising himself. He spoke with joy, "Humph. You are a smart man. How can you ask such a foolish question? Think about it. He is Commander Ye! Whose name is Ye in the entire Kingdom of Chen? Humph. Who could father such a wonderful son if not my brother Ye Nantian? Who else do you think I will return to the battle for?"

Zhu Chenggong opened his mouth widely while staring at him.

After a while, he took in a cold breath and finally spoke, "Oh heavens... Old Song... Are you kidding? Commander Ye is Ye Xiao? Son of General Ye? The young guy who has been wasting his life fooling around in the city, doing all evil business full of dirty schemes, and leading the 'three lords in town' that people always talk about... Ye Xiao?"

Zhu Chenggong's mouth was big enough to swallow an entire elephant!

Ye Xiao was obviously more famous than he could imagine in the kingdom!

The head of the stupid 'three lords in town'!

Song Jue rolled up his eyes while staring at Zhu Chenggong. He said with anger, "Do you know how to continue a good talk? Like father, like son! They are both heroic figures! Can't you see?"

Zhu Chenggong burst with anger and muttered, "Like father like son my ass. You know what your nephew is! A man like him... He actually becomes a commander here... Are you kidding me? What a sonless and vicious man to recommend him? The king just agreed? Is the king going to give up on Western Army now? Heaven and hell! I believe my hundreds of thousands brother will die within half a day in his stupid command!"

"We have been fighting so hard, sacrificing our lives, and we end up with this? I am so f\*cking foolish. That flying big white flag has shown me the sign. I can't believe it is this prick leading the army to us. That makes sense now. Of course he would hold that f\*cking hilarious white flag in the battle!"

Apparently, Vice-Commander Zhu didn't have faith for Ye Xiao at all!

He completely didn't trust him!

Zhu Chenggong was totally helpless and hopeless at the moment, after feeling hopeful a while earlier!

Despair filled him. He had just felt there was a hope, and then realized it was a fake image. That only led him to a sorrowful despair!

He thought a savior came for them. It ended up a bloody stupid foppish young lord who had been notorious for a long time...

To be commanded by a man like that in the battle...

He felt extremely aggrieved...

"Stop being like a prick. You know no sh\*t! No. You are a piece of sh\*t!" Song Jue disdainfully glared at him. "Do you know how that white flag with blood words come?"

Zhu Chenggong spoke annoyed, "Just got some blood from somebody. Isn't it easy? Don't you think I can recognize it? What is the cheapest in a war? Life! Blood is everywhere! I can make one thousand flag like that for you within seconds! Bloody hell. Coming with a white flag to the battle? And you think that's amazing or what? Stain in with some human blood and what? It becomes sacred? Pah!"

Song Jue was annoyed. He fiercely spoke, "Zhu Chenggong, it has been just a few years and you have become so arrogant now! You said you can make one thousand of that white flag, right? What if

you fail?"

Zhu Chenggong wouldn't give in a bit facing Song Jue's fierceness. He fiercely spoke too, "Song Jue, don't think you can overwhelm me with your martial art! I did say it! So what? Hmm. I know. You think we are short for materials here, so we can't make that stupid white flag like your stupid nephew. That is why you are so confident that I won't be able to make it. That is why you are being such a prick! Pah! You think you are good? You are... hmm... Wicked! Right. That's it! Song Jue! Look at you, after a few years, you have become shrewd now. You actually play tricks of those stupid scholars on me. Now, I finally know what you are!"

...

# Chapter 683: Sincerely Convinced!

---

Song Jue was shocked. When he realized it, he laughed because of extreme anger. "Zhu Chenggong, look at you now. Talking nonsense like a stupid scholar. Fine. I don't have all day. Don't give me one thousand white flag. Pah. Not even one white flag. If you can get me the blood in the same way like Xiao did, I will admit defeat and leave right away with my nephew! Well, what if you fail?"

Apparently, Zhu Chenggong was furious. He decided not to let it go. He shouted with anger, "Not white flag, just the blood? What difficulty does it have? Just say it. How much blood on the guy's flag? You are so confident that I will fail. I guess you guys have gathered the blood from lots of men for that flag. Ten or twenty? Well you are making a mistake here. We are short for many things, but the last thing we lack of is human blood! I can get as much as I want! If I can't make it, I call you father! How's that sound!"

Song Jue calmed down facing Zhu Chenggong. He spoke in a deep voice, "You are going to call me dad for sure. Let me tell you something. That is blood from many people indeed. Four hundred and sixty-five young men!"

Zhu Chenggong was shocked. He couldn't believe it and he said, "What? You nephew sacrificed nearly five hundred men for that flag? Hundreds of young strong men? Your stupid nephew deserves to die! He has to die! Where is my sword! I am going to avenge those pasted good men!"

Song Jue stared right at Zhu Chenggong's eyes and fiercely

shouted, "Pah! You want to avenge those bastards? Fine! Let me tell you the truth! Those are over four hundred young foppish lords from the influential families! You know how they hide in the back every time when the army marches for battle? That is their blood!"

Zhu Chenggong opened his eyes wide. If the sockets didn't hold his eyes tightly, his eyeballs would have definitely shot out. He felt it unbelievable and he looked at Song Jue. "You... What did you just say? The blood on that white flag is from those bastards that I always want to smash to death... Are you kidding..."

"Hilarious?" Song Jue sneered at Zhu Chenggong. "You won't have the chance to see such a thing happen though. Those young bastards had their heads chopped off in front of the king and all those officials... No one survived! You should have seen that... Heads rolling on the floor... At least a hundred of those officials passed out..."

"Urhhhhh..." Zhu Chenggong opened his eyes big like a bell. Eye sockets were such a hindrance. They stopped the eyeballs from popping out twice at least.

"It was simple. Before they were chopped, he prepared the white flag and a vat. Two hundred men did it together. Chop, chop... A full vat of blood... My nephew, the great Commander Ye, grabbed a huge brush pen and wrote on the flag! He didn't even look at the king, just led the army out right away like thunder!"

"What the f\*ck!" Zhu Chenggong was shocked. "He did it in front of the king?"

"Yes!" Song Jue nodded.

"In front of those bastards' fathers? The officials?" Zhu Chenggong couldn't believe it.

"Absolutely!" Song Jue nodded like a chicken pecking.

"None survived?" Zhu Chenggong was totally astonished.

"Of course!"

"What the hell. What a fierce foppish lad!" Zhu Chenggong admired it right away.

He would never do that. He wouldn't be able to! He wouldn't dare!

He might just think about it and that's all!

"Are you addicted in speaking useless words? Why keep talking meaninglessly?" Song Jue proudly said, "Look at him. He is my nephew!"

Zhu Chenggong sneered at him and said, "I don't think that was meaningless. And people only say 'that is my son' with pride... unlike you..."

Song Jue looked at him like he was going eat human flesh. He gritted with his teeth and said, "I think it is pretty much meaningless! You don't even have a nephew like him!"

Zhu Chenggong had nothing to say. After a while, his neck was still red because of anger and he said, "So what! I will get a boy when I go home this time! There's still time!"

Song Jue was shocked.

[There is? Really?]

Zhu Chenggong was still in shock. He rubbed his hands and said, "That is crazy. Too crazy."

"Humph. That is crazy? Not to me! The real craziness will come." Song Jue curled his lip and said, "You know Grand Tutor Wang?"

"Sure. I do. His son was in the army? He assigned his son to the royal guards before the army marched for battle." Zhu Chenggong curled his lip and said, "Coward prick!"

"This time, his son was chopped too." Song Jue said, "Before we left, Grand Tutor Wang saw his son die, so he stood right in front of the troops trying to stop Commander Ye. That was insane. He was smashed over by the horse steps. Commander Ye didn't even look at that old man. After Commander Ye rode over, the army followed up. Wang became a pile of... Hmm... There was not even

a bit of his flesh left... Right... Light and dust... After the army rode over, that old bastard became dust in the light!"

"Oh my f..." Zhu Chenggong opened his eyes big and wide and couldn't say more words. He kept his mouth opened but couldn't say a word. After a while, he finally finished the word 'f\*ck' and said, "My heavens. He did that while the king was there too?"

Song Jue said, "That's right!"

Zhu Chenggong widely opened his eyes and kept taking in cold breath. He kept murmuring, "That's awesome... That's rough... Holy heaven and hell... F\*ck me... How could he be so tough!"

Song Jue humphed. He was apparently disdainful.

"I have to say that is so entertaining!" Zhu Chenggong laughed loudly. The hatred and anger on his face had vanished. And then he frowned and said, "But Commander Ye must have offended the entire court... He is going to live a tough life in the future. No. He barely will have any future, I am afraid!"

And he sighed. "Young man. He shouldn't be reckless on that. To do things under the guidance of one's personal feeling is... foolish..."

He had been questioning and cursing Ye Xiao a while earlier, yet he started to worry for him now.

Song Jue humped and said, "We will leave soon. Who cares about the court. Even if we stay, what can they possibly do to us... Anyway, it is your problem. We won't bother..."

Zhu Chenggong apparently felt surprised. "You will leave? Where to? Hmm. You mean you are resigning and never get on the court again?"

...

# Chapter 684: Who Is Lord Xiao?

---

"Hmm. More or less like that!" Song Jue raised his head up. "If we are not going to leave, why would we look for troubles? Why would we offend those people? Do you think we are stupid?"

Zhu Chenggong was shocked again. After a while, he said, "Overwhelming! Excellent!"

Song Jue smiled. "Stop it, Zhu. Don't do this. Now what? The blood. Why don't you make some? You said you have many people and much blood. I don't need you to get the blood from hundreds of young lords. Just get four or five of them. How's that? Am I not generous?"

Zhu Chenggong shook his head. "Brother, I don't have young lords in my troops. Even if I do, I won't dare to do that... Fine. I was wrong."

Song Jue smiled. "Oh you admit it. Good. I am a generous man. However, you have to keep your promise, don't you?"

Zhu Chenggong half closed his eyes and smiled. "Brother Song, come on. Look at you. Were we really that serious? No way. That was just joking!"

Song Jue raged up immediately. "Joking? Joking your fat ass! Quickly! DO it! A deal is a deal!"

Zhu Chenggong cupped his hands and sadly spoke, "Brother Song, please. You are like a real brother to me. I was being ignorant. I couldn't even see it even if a god stood in front of me. Please, you said it. It was just a joke in my fat ass... I am the fat ass, alright? I am a fat stupid ass... How about that? Please, my dear senior brother!"

Song Jue felt good hearing Zhu Chenggong calling himself a fat ass. After all, he should be a generous man!

However, he drank up all the fine liquor that Zhu Chenggong collected for a long time...

...

Outside the city, on the other side.

The camps of the Kingdom of Lan-Feng.

The War God of the Kingdom of Lan-Feng, and also the Prince, Wenren Jianyin, was frowning.

He was just over forty years old. He looked spirited, watching the top of the walls of Iron Peak.

He spoke in a low voice, "How come their army came so fast? That is must faster than we thought. There should be barely any powerful force inside Kingdom of Chen. They should be short for soldiers, also generals. The only possible commander is Chen

Xuantian, their king. If he comes, it should be much later than this. It shouldn't be so fast. Who is the commander this time?"

"Where is our spy in the Kingdom of Chen? He should have sent the message back!"

That was reasonable though. Back in the Kingdom of Chen, when the king appointed Ye Xiao to be the commander of the army, it took him three days, but only senior officials knew about it. That meant few people knew about it. Since Ye Xiao led the army to the west, he moved so fast. Day and night, the army marched ahead without rests. It was faster than anybody else for sure. That was why the spy couldn't deliver the message to the Kingdom of Lan-Feng before Ye Xiao arrived!

Wenren Chuchu was wearing white suit and cyan robe. Her hair was tied up. She was still in a perfect body shape. She was also watching the Iron Peak, and then she slowly spoke behind the silk mask, "There may be something wrong with our intelligence system. We don't know who their commander is yet. I am sure that is not Chen Xuantian. In other words, he can't be any capable figure. As far as we could see, that is an army of no more than one hundred thousand men. That is not a small number, but they still cannot threaten us!"

Wenren Jianyin spoke in a deep voice, "We can't underestimate them. Quantity does not guarantee victory. That sound earlier must be the rest of the western army shouting together. The new commander made those defeated men shout like that when he just arrived. I don't think he is an ordinary figure!"

"This is war!" Wenren Jianyin took in a deep breath. "A commander's capability and prestige could be shown from his soldiers. From that shout, I can feel that he is a strong enemy to us. He must be a tough bone!"

"He is very likely a difficult one to defeat!" Wenren Jianyin frowned and put an conclusion.

Wenren Chuchu nodded.

"Besides, the new commander has arrived, why haven't they changed the commander's flag yet? Are they trying confuse me? That is not a good move at all!" Wenren Jianyin looked at the Iron Peak and couldn't understand it.

"Wu Gonglie was an admirable man. His soldiers are loyal to him. This new commander must be trying to buy popularity among them, so he didn't change the flag right away," Wenren Chuchu said.

"That is possible. However, it is always the right thing to change the flag and set his own prestige. If he truly did this to buy popularity from those wounded men, he would be a fool. We shouldn't fear for it!"

While they were talking, somebody shouted, "Their commander's flag is rising..."

It was a normal thing to report, but the guy shouted like he had

seen something extremely strange, as if he couldn't believe what he had seen.

Wenren Jianyin and Wenren Chuchu were surprised, so they looked up to the flag.

No matter how they tried to stay calm, when they saw the flag, they were surprised.

A huge flag was rising up on the Iron Peak!

That was a huge flag. It was at least five times the size as normal commander's flag. It stretched out under the brisk wind.

That was magnificent!

However, it was such a special flag... because it was a... white flag!

Men in the army of the Kingdom of Lan-Feng kept whispering about it.

"I'll be damned. Did I see the real thing?"

"Holy heavens. A white flag? That is awesome! Are they surrendering?"

"I have fought in battles for so many years and this is the first time I see somebody get in the battle with a white flag. That is... pretty f\*cked up..."

"That's true. How strange! White flag... Oi? Words on it?"

"I saw it already. That is a huge flag, but it is still too far away. I can't see it clearly enough. Maybe it says 'surrender'?"

"That's right. A white flag. It should be written something to surrender! Not much a surprise to me!"

...

Wenren Jianyin stared at the flag and tried to focus on it. He had a pair of sharp eyes. He couldn't see the words clearly with his Sky Origin Stage capability.

"Lord Xiao, Kingdom of Chen?" He was surprised, "Chuchu, you have been staying in the capital of Kingdom of the Chen for a while, do you know who Lord Xiao is?"

...

# Chapter 685: Taboo!

---

Wenren Chuchu was confused. "I... I don't know. I have never heard of Lord Xiao!"

"Think! Is there any important figure whose name is Xiao? He must be a young generation in the Kingdom of Chen who must be important to them!" Wenren Jianyin blandly spoke, "He must be a young man of an important family. Otherwise, he himself wouldn't think of such a title..."

"Hmm... As far as I am concerned, among all the young generation of the important figures, there is only one man in the Chen-Xing City who is named Xiao." Wenren Chuchu slowly spoke, "Ye Nantian's son, Ye Xiao!"

Wenren Jianyin frowned.

"Ye Xiao? Ye Nantian's son?" He took a breath out and said, "Then this is going to be tough."

Wenren Chuchu said, "How come?"

"If it is the son of any others in the Kingdom of Chen, we can just kill him. It is not a big deal. We are in opposite positions after all. However, as he is son of Ye Nantian... that is a problem."

Wenren Jianyin bitterly smiled. "Ye Nantian's son. That is a taboo for all kingdoms. In fact, Ye Nantian is a taboo for all the

kingdoms."

"You see, Prince Hua-Yang, Su Dingguo, he is a capable general who is great in fighting with the army. He has never lost a battle. However, he is just a mortal man." Wenren Jianyin continued, "Su Dingguo will grow old and he will eventually lose a battle. That is why I am sure I can defeat him someday! However, Ye Nantian is something else!"

"Ye Nantian has a title, War God of Chen. It actually underestimates him. He is like a god when he commands his men in the battle. He is invincible. His men move exactly how he wants them to. He is not only War God of Chen. He is War God of Han-Yang!" He said, "Certainly, if he is just good at fighting a war, the kingdoms may fear for him, but wouldn't see him as a taboo. The reason for that is that he is an invincible miracle!"

"If not that he seldom uses his true capability, always trying to outwit his enemy and the House of the Chaotic Storms was constraining him, the Kingdom of Chen should have conquered the entire world for many years! He is a taboo to all the kingdoms, while his only son is his own taboo subject! The reason why Chen Xuantian could get Ye Nantian's full support is that Chen Xuantian used his secret medicine to save Ye Nantian's son!"

"In other words, if his son gets hurt here, we will have to face Ye Nantian's revenge, no matter whether we conquer the Kingdom of Chen or not! His flame of anger will never stop! The most helpless thing is that the Kingdom of Chen is absolutely not capable of defending him!"

"That is why I would rather fight Ye Nantian himself, than fight against his son. On one hand, it will be no honor to a young lad in the battle, and on the other, there is too much apprehension to fight him. Besides, I may win the battle if it is Ye Nantian I am facing. To fight his son, I will not dare to kill him, even if I defeat him. That is an awkward situation."

He made a long sigh. "If the tunnel to upper realms isn't going to be sealed, you won't need to leave. If you don't need to go, we may still get some help from your sect to defeat Ye Nantian! Now, there are only four months before you go. This is going to be a huge problem."

Wenren Chuchu's eyes were full of cold light as he said, "If it really is so helpless, maybe I should try to kill Ye Nantian before leaving!"

Wenren Jianyin turned around and looked at his niece. After a while, he blandly spoke, "Chuchu, little girl, you are very powerful. You are beyond my recognition indeed, but you are not Ye Nantian's match. To kill him in his great army, it is nearly impossible. There is nobody of your sect staying in this world to help. You will have to fight alone. That will make it even harder."

"Besides... even if you can do it, I won't let you take the risk." He continued, "This is a war here in the mortal world. Your father and I would rather let you be free outside this world. Just let me and the others fight this war. We don't want you to take the risk."

"There were a few legendary duels of famous figures in the world. They were all battles of two men. If I die under Ye Nantian's

hands, I will die without regret. If Ye Nantian dies in my hands, he will have no regret either. But if people outside this world kills either of us, it will be a humiliation to both. Ye Nantian has been commanding his army for all these years and he barely used his personal martial art to win the war. I don't think I should be ignoble on this!"

He smiled. "There are rules in the mortal world. Schemes, tricks, sneaky attacks, poisoning... We use all kinds of shameless methods to win a fight, because it is our fight."

"Think about the fight between Wu Gonglie and I. Honestly, he truly impressed me with his wonderful defense. If I didn't set a rat among his people, I wouldn't win. However, I played a vile trick, and I won. That is my victory. If you have made the strike and killed Wu Gonglie, that would be too much. That would be a shameful victory!"

"A soldier's destiny, responsibility, and honor, is to die in the battle." He continued, "Me, Su Dingguo, Zhan Qianshan, Ye Nantian, also the late Wu Gonglie, no matter what we will end up with, we won't regret! If you make the strike in the battle, it is against our basic moral belief. Our self-esteem won't let it happen."

"We are men in the army. We can't fly. We can't live forever. We can't look down at the entire world. But we own the battlefield! We fight with our own methods! We do not use crooked sideways!"

"If we do, Ye Nantian, should have long killed us all thousands of times now. It should be just a piece of cake for him. However, he never did it. I know that he wouldn't even think of doing it."

He said, "That is why I can't do it either."

"Even if I know I will die in failure!"

He looked at the white flag and spoke in a deep voice, "So, Chen Xuantian truly made a vile strike by sending this man here. This must be his only option. That's a smart move."

Wenren Chuchu blandly spoke, "Uncle, you don't think Lord Xiao is a good commander, why? Like father, like son. Ye Xiao must be confident as he dares to lead the army this time!"

...

# Chapter 686: Meeting

---

Wenren Jianying bitterly smiled. "Chuchu, why would you have such an absurd idea? Don't you know what kind of person Ye Xiao is? If he really have even a slightly capable thing, our men in the capital of the Kingdom of Chen would have gotten him long ago. Do not say that... Hmm... You mean..."

Wenren Chuchu blandly said, "No matter what, Lord Xiao is in the battle now. He is the commander of our enemy. He is our biggest enemy now. Ye Nantian's son stands in the battle, then he is a man of the army. That is the only thing matters. A general dies in the battle. It is normal and reasonable. If we kill him in the fight, Ye Nantian shouldn't say anything about it. Like you said, Uncle, we are not the one who sent him to this battle!"

Wenren Jianying took in a deep breath. He was enlightened. He said, "That's true! That's it! If Ye Xiao dies here, Ye Nantian should go get Chen Xuntian instead of us!"

"Transmit the order! Set a defiant formation to tease that Lord Xiao. Let's see this famous and shocking figure in the Kingdom of Chen!" He loudly shouted, no more gloominess.

As the commander put an order, the soldiers answered!

It was like the sound of tides.

The voice of the million troops rolled up the dust to the sky.

Ye Xiao sat in Iron Peak eating Chinese baked bread and heard the shout. He frowned. Two rays of cold lights came out from his eyes.

[Elites!]

[Only the elites in the battle can make such a shout!]

[The sound is rolling up with killing intent. The murderous vigor of their overwhelming spirits filled their voice!]

"That must be a strong rival!" Ye Xiao blandly spoke.

That was the first time he made a comment about Wenren Jianying!

Zhu Chenggong's eyes were filled with hatred. "That is the man who killed Great General! I wish him death! I will kill him and everybody in his clan!"

Ye Xiao stared at Zhu Chenggong and blandly spoke, "Vice-Commander Zhu, you are holding it too tight. It is one's destiny to die in the battle. We are all men of the army in this battle. There is only loyalty to the country, not personal hatred! Wu Gonglie was defeated. It is not Wenren Jianyin's fault. Commander Wu died with honor. It is an honorable way to die. We can fight for him, but we can't fight with hatred and murder somebody's families."

Zhu Chenggong spoke with anger, "Commander Ye, you don't get it. You can't feel the pain in me. Of course you can take it easy. When you lose somebody close to you in the battle, you will know that this hatred will stay in your chest forever."

Ye Xiao blandly spoke, "That is why you are only a vice-commander!"

"War is war. There is always rules in the battle." Ye Xiao raised his head, stared at Zhu Chenggong, and said in a low voice, "The reason why you cannot get on the same position as people like Wu Gonglie and Su Dingguo was not that you lack the capability. You don't have a commander's magnanimity! One day when you truly understand the magnanimity of Wu Gonglie, Wenren Jianyin, Zhan Qianshan and the same level heroes, you will become one of them!"

Zhu Chenggong was shocked. He looked up staring at Ye Xiao. He wanted to say something, but he had nothing to say.

...

The next day.

When the sun just rose up and the first sunlight shined on the earth. Inside or outside the Iron Peak, on both sides, horns long sounded.

That was a clear feeling.

The sound at this moment was a hello from the one hundred thousand men from the Kingdom of Chen to the million troops from the Kingdom of Lan-Feng, and also the other way around.

After that, the gate of Iron Peak, which had been shut for a long time, was slowly opened.

A group of men on horses were moving out.

It was less than one thousand men.

After a few hundred meters, they stopped.

Three men on horses were stilling moving ahead.

Ye Xiao. Song Jue. Ning Biluo.

The three of them were wearing light clothes. They didn't take any weapons or armors, like they just came out for a fun tour.

Song Jue, who was on the left, was wearing cyan clothes. His face looked cold and calm. Ning Biluo, who was on the right, wore black clothes and had a straight face.

Lord Xiao, Ye Xiao, was in the middle. He was smiling. He was wearing white clothes, white robe and a golden hat while riding a black horse. His hair was tied up. He was extremely handsome at

the moment.

He just rode the horse towards the million troops of the enemy with an indifferent face.

At the same time.

A long clarion sounded in the camp of the Kingdom of Lan-Feng. The gate of the camp opened. Three men went out on horses too.

One of them was wearing purple clothes, with solemn face and slim body. He had three threads of long beards and a pair of phoenix eyes. He didn't even look like a man of martial art on the horse. Instead, he was more like an old scholar with profound eyes.

On the left of him, there was another old man in cyan robes. He showed a solemn look on his face, and his eyes were sharp with cold lights.

On the right was a young woman in white. Her beautiful image made people feel like in a dream. She covered her face with a silk mask. Her eyebrows were deep, and her eyes were clear. Her horse was red. Even if she stood in front of people, she made them feel like in dreams.

Wenren Chuchu.

Ye Xiao saw her and then smiled.

He never expected to see the girl in the battle.

[Look how fate put us together!]

"To the man who rides in front. Are you War God of Lan-Feng, Wenren Jianyin, the prince?" Ye Xiao rode on the horse and showed an indifferent face. He stared at the man with eyes like two sharp swords.

"I am." Wenren Jianyin answered, "Is it the son of the War God of Chen, Ye Nantian, Ye Xiao, I am speaking to?"

"No!" Ye Xiao slightly raised his jaw and blandly spoke, "Wenren Jianyin, I officially inform you. The man who stands in front of you is the Commander of the Western Army of the Kingdom of Chen, Ye Xiao! Not the son of War God or anything else!"

Wenren Jianyin was solemn. He said, "My fault. I beg your pardon, Commander Ye!"

"I am the one who leads the honorable army to fight against your million troops." Ye Xiao's eyes were sharp like knives. "Wenren Jianyin, you should get ready for this. Do not feel grudge when you die!"

Wenren Jianyin laughed. "I have the guts to step on this battle, then why would I fear death. The same to you! I hope you won't die in regret!"

Ye Xiao indifferently smiled. That was full of arrogance.

Wenren Chuchu felt strangely familiar with Lord Xiao since he showed up.

However, she hadn't seen Lord Xiao, even though she had heard things about him before.

She wondered where did that familiar feeling come from!

...

# Chapter 687: It's You!

---

Wenren Jianyin looked aside and found Song Jue, who was staying beside Ye Xiao. He slightly closed his eyes and said, "Brother Song is here. It has been a long time."

It turned out they knew each other!

Steward Song had connections all over the world. He knew Zhu Chenggong and also knew Wenren Jianyin.

Wenren Jianyin was an old enemy.

Song Jue laughed. "It has been a while. Wenren, have you ever thought that we would meet again in the battle?"

Wenren Jianyin laughed. "Never. I thought you loved being a steward. Well, Lord Ye is here, and his steward follows. That's reasonable. I am being spoffish here!"

Song Jue humped. "I just like to be a steward. Not in your house though. What makes you think you can judge me? Reasonable your ass. Put your mind in the real business here. You are not going to face me this time. I am only doing a supporting role. I will watch you get defeated as carefully as I can! Your position in the Land of Han-Yang should be taken off and let somebody else have it long ago!"

Wenren Jianyin didn't feel offended at all. He gently smiled. "It is

always easy to wake up from sweet dreams. I don't want to disappoint you, but you have to be disappointed."

Song Jue just humped and didn't say a word.

Wenren Jianyin looked to Ning Biluo and said, "My I ask who this is?"

Ning Biluo slowly raised his head up and looked at him indifferently. He didn't even answer; he just lowered his gaze the next moment.

He actually ignored a war god in the world.

Wenren Jianyin suddenly felt pricking on the face like he was stabbed by a needle. His heart beat faster all of a sudden. An uncomfortable feeling haunted him with no reason!

Not only Wenren Jianyin, but also Wenren Chuchu and the old man were having the same feeling.

The old man felt it especially. He was spirited and arrogant at the beginning, like he looked down upon all else. However, at this moment, he felt an extreme cold qi. He was terrified.

He felt like he was deep in a wild forest alone, surrounded by all kinds of monsters!

He felt like he was going to die at any second. The feeling made his blood frozen in the veins.

He hurriedly raised his head up and looked at Ning Biluo, like looking at the most terrible person he had ever seen!

He was the least spirited and arrogant now!

Ning Biluo was stared at, but he looked like sleeping on the horse with a blank face...

The old man beside Wenren Jianyin was a superior cultivator in level nine of Sky Origin Stage. However, for Ning Biluo, he was even weaker than Wenren Jianyin. He wouldn't even look at him.

He was confident that he could kill that old man with one sword sway!

That was why that old man meant nothing to Ning Biluo at this situation!

The reason why that old man didn't look at Song Jue and Ye Xiao... He couldn't see through them at all!

He could feel the fierceness in Ning Biluo because they were both in Sky Origin Stage after all, although in big difference. Song Jue had been over the Sky Origin Stage, so he couldn't sense Song Jue's status. Ye Xiao was in the Sky Origin Stage though. However, he was as powerful as someone in the Spirit Origin Stage. Besides,

he had East-rising Purple Qi, which could hide his true status in a way. That was why the old man couldn't sense him too!

Wenren Jianyin and Wenren Chuchu realized the Ning Biluo was a powerful figure. They were surprised.

Wenren Jianyin pretended to still be calm and blandly spoke, "I guess this should be enough for us. This afternoon, let me see the real capability of Brother Song and Commander Ye. I wonder if Commander Ye is as great as they said."

Then he turned the horse over and shouted, "Head back!"

Three horses carried them back to their camps.

Wenren Chuchu suddenly stopped the horse while she had just left a short distance. She looked back at Ye Xiao and asked with confusion, "Lord Ye, did we meet somewhere before?"

She eventually felt it. She and Ye Xiao had touched each other. She was sensitive to his smell. She felt strange about it, so she asked!

Ye Xiao blandly spoke, "Not as I can remember. My lady, you have silky skin and perfect body shape. If I did see you before, I wouldn't forget!"

Wenren Chuchu humped. She looked at his face for a while and then suddenly jumped up high. She reached out her hand to grab

on Ning Biluo's face.

That was a precipitate attack. Her white pretty figure flashed in the air and then appeared in front of Ning Biluo. Her movement made an overwhelming power striking down with murderous qi.

She talked to Ye Xiao but attacked Ning Biluo!

Ning Biluo was shocked.

Apparently, he made the same mistake as Wenren Jianyin and the old man. He was much more powerful than that cyan-clothed old man and Wenren Jianyin, so he could clearly see both their cultivation status. However, he knew nothing about Wenren Chuchu's capability. Since she was a young woman, he thought that even though she was good, she wouldn't be "that" good, so he didn't really pay attention to her!

However, unexpectedly, that young woman was obviously a hidden superior cultivator. She had such overwhelming power that was even stronger than Ning Biluo.

However, it didn't mean Ning Biluo couldn't defend himself in this fight!

Ning Biluo was so good. Even though it was out of his expectation, even though he was shocked, he was experienced enough to take a fast reaction to draw out the long sword to strike back.

## Shadeless Sword.

A sword showed up in Ning Biluo's hand out of nothing. A mass of purple qi burst out around it. Thousands of sword shades rose up in a mass back to Wenren Chuchu.

Ning Biluo was striking his best defensive move as he encountered a surprise attack.

Wenren Chuchu humped. She suddenly stopped moving ahead to move back fast. She went forward and then moved back like it was one smooth move. That was incredible.

Ning Biluo's sword art, Shadeless Sword, was unique and sharp, but the attack only hit the air!

His attack came to nothing. The power made a slight reverse impact back to himself. His spiritual qi was blocked, and he knew things went wrong. He had made a mistake. If Wenren Chuchu attacked again, even though he could dodge, he would get to an absolute negative position in this fight!

While Ning Biluo held his breath and gathered his spiritual qi to make a final strike, the lady was gone! What a surprise!

- Shoot! - Wenren Chuchu had returned to her horse. She looked at Ning Biluo and blandly spoke, "Out of nothing; the purple qi in the skyline! I know it is you, Ning Biluo..."

...

# Chapter 688: Who Are You?

---

One strike, and it pointed the winner. The No. 1 assassin in the world, Ning Biluo, was actually defeated by an unheard-of young lady!

Wenren Chuchu finished talking and looked to Ye Xiao. After a while, she still hadn't said anything to him. She spurred the horse and returned to their camps.

While she was leaving on the horse, she still made people feel like in dreams.

Ye Xiao stared at her back and noticed the small lotus patterns on the robe that she was wearing. He frowned.

It reminded him of something.

No matter what clothes she was wearing, different colors, different styles, long robe or skirt, there was always small patterns of lotus on it. That had never changed.

That should be an intolerant thing for a lady!

But why did Wenren Chuchu never change that?

Ye Xiao thought about it but couldn't think of anything useful, though he had a strong feeling that he had the answer.

Song Jue was showing a solemn face. He looked at Wenren Chuchu and said, "So she is the princess of the Kingdom of Lan-Feng?"

Ye Xiao answered, "I guess she is."

On the other side, Ning Biluo still looked calm, but in fact, a drop of sweat was out from his hairline.

He was the only one who could feel the horrible stress Wenren Chuchu had made, because he was the one who got through it!

That moment, Ning Biluo could even feel the breath of death!

He had made a fast reaction, but that mistake could have gotten him killed if the lady made a second attack! Could he survive that?

Ning Biluo knew the answer himself!

It was not a good answer!

Song Jue looked more serious now. He said, "I am afraid that girl is not just a princess. The martial art she used just now is so strange. It is just a few moves yet it felt like countless shapes. If I didn't recognize it wrong, that must be... the prime treasure of Misty Cloud Palace, one of the three great forces in Qing-Yun Realm, Ice Jade Supreme Art!"

"The movement, the attacks... that is absolutely from Misty Cloud Palace!"

"Xiao Xiao, she is not an ordinary princess. You must be careful on that..." Song Jue spoke while staring at the back of Wenren Chuchu.

Ye Xiao blandly said, "So what. She is absolutely not a rival to my Uncle Song. We don't need to scare ourselves."

He laughed and then rode back.

He wasn't being arrogant. He truly felt it hilarious.

Wenren Jianyin had been planning to say something, but when he realized how powerful the three enemies were, he just went back without saying anything.

He was a conservative person. He was always overcautious.

That was why he lacked of the spirit of taking venturesome risk in the war.

The fight between him and Wu Gonglie earlier and all that he had done in the war proved it well!

Wu Gonglie was defeated by schemes. As his perfect defense line

was broken, it should be a one-sided great victory. But Wenren Jianyin failed to take Wu Gonglie down at once. If Wenren Chuchu didn't come with supports, Wu Gonglie might be able to buy more time for the Kingdom of Chen or even get away. When Wu Gonglie used his own life as bait to stop the attack, Wenren Jianyin still just proceeded with slow marching. He didn't even want to take him down once and for all. In fact, if he just put on a final strike, the Western Army would have been wiped out before Ye Xiao arrived. He should have been fighting in the central region of the Kingdom of Chen by now.

Wenren Jianyin was over cautious indeed, but it was the reason why he never got defeated in the battles after all!

A high-sounding victory might be better, but stability made him stand in the war long enough!

Ye Xiao was worried. He was thinking about how to deal with such a cautious man!

He frowned.

However, no matter how he tried to concentrated, he couldn't. He felt that there was a pair of eyes staring at him all the time.

...

Wenren Chuchu felt that her heart was beating out of the chest all the way back to her camp.

She nearly 'fled' away from the battle.

Why?

Wenren Jianyin saw his niece being strange with a red face, like she was drunk. He said, caring, "Chuchu, what's the matter?"

"Ah? I..." Wenren Chuchu stopped and then said, "Nothing. I am fine."

Wenren Jianyin felt even stranger. "Nothing? You are fine? Are you ill, Chuchu? You must tell me if you don't feel well. Please don't hide anything from our medic!"

"No... I am fine. I... I am not thinking about anything," she spoke incoherently. Her heart was in a mess with complicated emotions.

She truly didn't know what was inside her mind at the moment.

Wenren Jianyin frowned but didn't ask more. He spoke to the maid, "Go with the princess to her camp."

Wenren Chuchu left with the maid.

As she returned to her camp, she still felt her heart beating fast and heavily. She couldn't even remember how she came back to the camp.

Her heart was still beating fast.

She sat on the bed with a blank mind. She felt like she just recovered from a big disease. Emotions started to fill her heart.

"Ning Biluo! That guy is the No. 1 assassin in the world, Ning Biluo!"

"Lord Xiao... How come I feel so familiar with him!"

"Why is Ning Biluo in this place? He is a strong hand to Feng Monarch of Ling-Bao Hall! Why would he stay beside Ye Xiao? What does it mean?"

"Ning Biluo respects Ye Xiao. He is obedient. I can feel it from his eyes! That can't be wrong."

"Ning Biluo would never be obedient to others so easily. The House of the Chaotic Storms tried many times to recruit him, but was turned down. How could Lord Xiao keep him around? That is intriguing."

After a while, she finally sorted out a few lines in the mess in her heart.

[I decided to test Ning Biluo and revealed his personality as expected. That is a sudden decision and I didn't have scruples

about Ning Biluo. Why would I just get away after I got to know his face?]

[Do I fear for Ning Biluo? No. Before or after I knew it was him, I always knew I could absolutely defeat him. It wasn't a difficult thing to knock him down!]

[What was I thinking? Shouldn't I try to test Ye Xiao or Song Jue after that?]

[Why didn't I?]

[Why did I just get away awkwardly?]

[I shouldn't have!]

[Is it... I was too scared to?]

...

# Chapter 689: Kick the Camps!

---

Wenren Chuchu lied on her bed, looking confused.

"Feng Zhiling! Who are you? What are you..."

"I know your face is not what I saw on Feng Zhiling. Feng Zhiling must be your disguise!"

"Then who are you?"

She felt heavy in the head. She didn't know what she was thinking. She just felt so lazy and didn't want to do anything. After thinking for a long time, she fell asleep on the bed.

She was having a dream.

In the dream, Feng Monarch's face showed up. He was walking over to her...

However, when he got closer, he became so handsome with sharp nose and eyes.

That face was exactly Ye Nantian's son, Lord Xiao, Ye Xiao!

She exclaimed and woke up from the dream, gasping again and again.

The maid outside the door was terrified. She rushed in and said, "Princess, are you alright?"

Wenren Chuchu gasped and drank some water. When she calmed down a bit, her heartbeat slowed down. She asked, "What time is it?"

"It is just past noon." The maid was worried. She looked at Wenren Chuchu and said, "Princess, you have slept over five hours."

"Five hours..." Wenren Chuchu bitterly smiled. She truly didn't know what was wrong with herself now.

She didn't need to sleep as much as ordinary people anymore.

When she was tired, she just sat in meditation and that would recover herself entirely.

Even though when she wanted to sleep, she would never sleep over one hour.

Yet she had slept over five hours!

That was unbelievable.

"Anybody came for me while I was sleeping?" she asked the maid.

"No. His highness told me to let you rest well. Nobody dares to disturb you," the maid answered.

"Hmm." Wenren Chuchu was then lost in thoughts again.

The maid served her well. She ate something and was still wandering in thoughts. When she finished the meal, the sky turned dark. Night had come.

She was still in thoughts.

After a while, when the maid was getting out cautiously, Wenren Chuchu asked, "Wait. The enemy didn't make any attacks this afternoon?"

The maid smiled. "You worry too much, Princess. We have over one million strong men. They have just over two hundred thousand... They should feel lucky to hold the Iron Peak for some time. How would they dare to make any attack first? If they did, they must be looking for death themselves."

Wenren Chuchu said, "Things change in the battle. Nobody can always win. We must not be reckless."

In fact, she was thinking, [What would you do if you really are here? Would you just hold the defense.]

When she thought so, noise came over from outside her camp. Suddenly, something exploded. Horse steps sounded everywhere.

She was shocked. "That..."

"Enemy invasion!"

A fearful exclamation sounded in the camps.

The sky was suddenly lit up.

A rising big fire!

At the same time, horses rode into the camps like thunder!

A mass of murderous qi suddenly spread in the camps of the Kingdom of Lan-Feng.

Wenren Chuchu could hear the voice of her uncle Wenren Jianyin. "Let them in! Lure them and wipe them out!"

"No!" Wenren Chuchu jumped out and rushed out the camp like wild wind.

She knew Wenren Jianyin seemed to be doing the right choice.

In fact, it was the right thing to do facing almost all enemies.

When a million men army was invaded by a two hundred thousand men army, to stay calm and react stably would definitely lead to victory.

To lure the enemy deep into the camp then wipe them out was the best plan.

However, it was not a practical plan against the enemy they were facing this time!

This was to lead death onto themselves!

Because... there were too many brilliant assassins in the martial world!

Wenren Chuchu knew that it would be a horrible thing if those were really assassins from Ling-Bao Hall...

One assassin could fight one hundred in the dark. A great amount of assassins working together, that was invincible! It was not a fight at all. It would be massacre!

Wenren Chuchu was extremely terrified. She rushed out the tent and moved so fast as a white shadow. She was heading towards Wenren Jianyin's tent.

She didn't worry about herself. Even Ning Biluo would die under

one strike fight against her. She wouldn't worry about her safety.

Even if the assassins of Ling-Bao Hall fought together against her, she could still get away after killing a few of them. She was beyond the cultivation limitation of this world. She was simply difficult to defeat here!

However, she had to worry about her uncle. As far as she knew about those assassins, any of them could kill Wenren Jianyin in a one on one combat!

She didn't fear a bunch of strong ants, but her uncle did, because he was an ant too! Not even a strong one!

She was moving fast. While she was moving, she saw a dark flow rushing over through the gate of the camps in an overwhelming way.

A camp invasion was usually planned in the midnight before dawn.

However, Lord Xiao wasn't following any rule.

He actually started an invasion when it just turned dark!

That was an extremely fierce invasion!

This was a weird invasion. Even Wenren Jianyin was surprised.

He was in a muddle.

[This is insane!]

However, insane or not, it depended on the circumstances. With overwhelming power, it was not insane, it was brave and thoughtful!

At the moment, the invasion of the Kingdom of Chen was like a burning red knife stabbing into the camps of the Kingdom of Lan-Feng. Wherever they got to, people were knocked down like dead wood!

...

# Chapter 690: Baffling Battle!

---

Some of the men fell into the pits against cavalry, but the others just ignored them. They just kept rushing into the center of the camps!

It felt like... they were... trying to run through the million troops?

[What a sweet dream!]

[Idiot's daydream!]

[Summer insects speak of ice!]

Wenren Jianyin and a few generals besides him were all sneering.

[We are a million men army. If ten thousand of you can easily break through us... why don't we just buy some pieces of tofu and smack them on our heads. That may get us killed!]

They were experienced in the battlefield. They didn't need to see the people. They knew the number by looking at the dust and hearing the sound of it.

They always guessed it right.

That was why they knew roughly how many people were riding over to them at the moment.

"Surprise attack. That is good. He did well on the surprising part. However, what a pity, they have much less than they need here." Wenren Jianyin watched the battle and blandly spoke, "That is never going to threaten us. It will actually set themselves up in troubles."

"That's right." A general with a rough face stepped forward. "Commander, please let me go meet them. I will wipe them up with my lord sword!"

As he stepped out for the mission, the others all followed.

"No rush! At least not now!" Wenren Jianyin looked at the fire and dust and blandly said, "General Wang should still be able to handle it well... That is a group of capable men they sent... However, they are still not strong enough. Look at them. They should be more disciplined! That is never going to turn big! Did I overestimate Ye Xiao earlier?"

While he was talking, a white figure flashed. Wenren Chuchu showed up in front of Wenren Jianyin. She looked alerted.

"Why are you here, Chuchu?" Wenren Jianyin looked at her surprisedly. "It is just a small fight. Why are you so nervous? Do you feel better now?"

Wenren Chuchu tried to smile, but she didn't respond.

She couldn't tell the truth yet.

She knew that if they were truly fighting against the man she had been thinking of, it wouldn't be any small fight!

Anything that was connected to him would turn out to be big and fatal!

She had experienced quite a lot!

While they were talking, someone among the invaders shouted, "Lan-Feng has been prepared! A long fight is not what we want! Retreat!"

And then they turned over and rushed away on the horses.

That was out of expectation.

Nobody ever thought that they would just retreat like that, leaving hundreds of dead bodies. They had come so vigorously and fiercely after all.

[What is wrong with them?]

Wenren Jianyin's men were all surprised. Because Wenren

Jianyin had given the order to keep all gates open and let those men in, nobody crowded over to stop the invaders. They easily rushed to the gate.

At the moment, a splendid swaying light of sword shined up in the dark night like a long lightning. Hundreds of Kingdom of Lan-Feng soldiers who were trying to stop the cavalry exclaimed and fell down in blood. A broad way out showed up in front all of a sudden.

About eight thousand men on the horses rushed out the camps with dust in the air.

Somebody among them laughed. "Wenren Jianyin, we came and we left as we wished. I dare you come and chase us!"

The sound of their running horses were like thunders striking further and further away!

The camp of the Kingdom of Lan-Feng was left in a mess. Their wounded soldiers moaned because of pain.

That was out of everybody's expectation.

They rushed in like they would die fighting, but then they just left.

What was it?

They didn't even cause any serious damage. Did they just want to make some useless noise by sacrificing a few of their men?

"Check the damage!" Wenren Jianyin was solemn. He couldn't think though it. He was lost in thoughts. He knew it must be a scheme.

But what was it?

That was weird. Even Wenren Jianyin couldn't see through it; he only scratched his head with annoyance.

Deep in his heart, he knew that was not a normal fight.

If Lord Ye truly just started a fight so casually, how could the Kingdom of Chen send him to fight Wenren Jianyin!

It was an unexpected fight, but it came and left both in surprise. A bunch of men came on the horses and left so quickly. That was like a street fight between two gangs. The invaders were like a bunch of gangsters. They came and started to make troubles, and then quickly left when they realized they couldn't get anything good. They didn't just leave. They even shouted to tease the opponents. What Lord Xiao had done was exactly a gangster style!

Soldiers checked the damage of men in the army all the time. They were experienced, so they got it done quickly.

Some of them started to sweep the camps and sort everything out.

"Report! Commander, four thousand three hundred and sixteen good men died. Seven hundred and thirty-two injured." A soldier reported to their commander, "Enemy left two thousand nine hundred and ninety-five behind. None survived. All dead."

Wenren Jianyin's face turned rough.

Those men rushed into his camp. That was an invasion indeed. The enemy struck in surprise, but he was holding a firm land with numerous traps they set up earlier. He had prepared for the attack for a long time, however, he had actually lost so many men!

He had lost nearly twice of Lord Xiao's!

A general beside him tried to comfort him, "Those men they sent, they are all elites. It is not easy to knock them down with normal soldiers. We lost more men in this, but it is reasonable. Strictly speaking, it could be considered a victory of ours..."

He was trying to make an explanation about why they lost more people in the fight, so as to ease the gloomy atmosphere.

In fact, he wasn't wrong at all. The Kingdom of Lan-Feng lost more people, but almost all of them were ordinary soldiers. Lord Xiao's men were all elites. That was a huge difference. Besides, the Kingdom of Lan-Feng had times of soldiers than the Kingdom of

Chen on this battle. They could handle the loss better than Lord Xiao!

The generals who could stay beside the commander were all experienced men of war. They could surely understand it, so when that general finished talking, the others all nodded!

Wenren Jianyin was the only one who disagreed. He shouted with anger, "Nonsense! Their men are elites, so mine men are all useless gluttons?"

...

# Chapter 691: Multiple Attempts of Assassination!

---

The generals lowered their heads. They didn't say a word to argue, but their faces were all red.

[Isn't commander calling us useless gluttons?]

The dead bodies were sorted out and put on a side.

Men of opponents were on one side, while their men in the other. That made two long rows of dead bodies.

Wenren Jianyin walked over and looked at the dead men. He sighed.

"Our men died under the wounds on their chests. They were cut in the front. They didn't hold back facing powerful enemies. They are good men. They sacrificed themselves to create opportunity for others to damage the enemy."

He looked at the dead bodies with sorrow in the eyes. "Their men have multiple injuries. Most of them were wounded on the back. Apparently, our men mostly killed them by a sneaky back-stab. They were killed under awareness. Those were good soldiers."

"Our enemy is a team of all good soldiers like this. That is horrible."

"Uncle, don't get too close." Wenren Chuchu stepped forward and stopped Wenren Jianyin/ "Something is wrong."

Wenren Jianyin frowned. "We are in our own place. What wrong could it be?"

"They may be pretending to be dead to sneak into us." Wenren Chuchu looked at the dead bodies with cold eyes. She gave a hint to a general at the side.

The general didn't hesitate. He waved a hand and somebody went over to check on the bodies.

They were more careful on the double check.

At this moment, among those dead bodies, over a dozen bodies suddenly jumped out like zombies. Suddenly, they became over a dozen sharp shooting arrow, shooting towards Wenren Jianyin.

That scared the others the hell out!

They never thought it could be such a trap.

It was an assassination earned by sacrificing thousands of lives!

Wenren Chuchu sneered. [I knew it! You want to pull the rug from under me? What a silly dream!]

She moved fast appearing as a white shadow and stayed in front of Wenren Jianyin. Her sword was swaying fast as the sword light flashed, like the stars shined from the sky.

Her sword move actually kept Wenren Jianyin under perfect protection. Her sword became a shield over him. At the same time, the sword light expended and started to attack the assassins.

The assassins looked cold and stiff on the face. Their eyes were sharp. As the sword lights were about to hit them, they started to make even more powerful strikes. They didn't panic at all. They suddenly shouted at the same time. Three of them rushed into the sword light attack and sacrificed themselves. Their blood splashed and tainted the sky.

That worked well. Wenren Chuchu's sword light attack was powerful, but it was stopped by the sacrifice of the three men!

Wenren Chuchu half closed her eyes. Apparently, it was far beyond her expectation. She could see that those men were all in beginning levels of Sky Origin Stage, although they were good and fierce. She was confident that her sword attack could damage them all if it hit on them. However, the three pasted ones actually sacrificed themselves to stop the attack. They died, but they earned the opportunity for the others to live on!

Wenren Chuchu realized that if those men started to take leave, at least half of them could leave safely!

However, things went beyond her expectation again!

As her sword light attack was vanished, one of the guys suddenly speeded up. The sword in his hand suddenly emitted dozens of meters long sword qi and stuck on Wenren Jianyin.

He was fearless facing Wenren Chuchu, such a powerful cultivator. He actually still kept rushing towards Wenren Jianyin!

That was a tough man!

However, he was not as tough in cultivation!

A Sky Origin Stage cultivator beside Wenren Jianyin shouted with anger and his long sword flew out from his hand.

- Puff! -

Expectedly, that man was cut through the body. He was cut through by the sword and pushed backward by the sword at the same time. That long sword qi vanished as well. It didn't cause any damage.

Wenren Chuchu stopped an assassination. The superior cultivators in the camps were all enlightened. They yelled and crowded up together. Wenren Jianyin had experienced a lot. He didn't panic, just stepped back a few meters, and hid among his men. It was impossible to assassinate him under such a situation.

The rest of the assassins knew it was not possible to finish the task. They exclaimed at the same time and then jumped up to the sky with shiny swords, and then flew out of the camp like shooting arrows.

"You truly think you can flee?" Wenren Chuchu gave the order, "Archer! Fire!"

All of a sudden, the sky turned dark!

Countless arrows flew in the air, covering the sky.

There were seven assassins fleeing away. Five of them instantly became like hedgehogs falling down to the floor heavily. However, two of them flew up to the flag poles and pushed themselves again and flew away again.

They became two streams of shining sword lights in the air. They jumped out hundreds of meters away like shooting stars. The flying arrows were chasing them like rainstorm. However, the two of them actually just rushed out forcibly.

Wenren Chuchu saw that they were about to get away. Her eyes turned cold and she jumped up. Her sharp sword suddenly shined and then she became a mass of white storm, shooting out after the two assassins.

When she just flew out, among the dead bodies on the floor, one

more jumped up all of a sudden!

While that man jumped out, he was having a huge overwhelming fierceness. He actually became a mass of thunderstorm!

A massive sword light along with lightning shined in the air and rushed towards Wenren Jianyin, who was under strong protection at the moment.

One after another attempt of assassination, one sharper than another, in the million troops camp, striking on the Commander!

It was impossible, but there was also hope to change the situation. This was an overwhelming strike. Wenren Jianyin was in fatal danger!

Wenren Chuchu just flew out a moment earlier, and then she felt something was wrong. As she looked back, she saw that splendid mass of lights of sword. It was shooting ahead with murderous power. In just a short time, at least fifty soldiers were cut into body parts trying to stop it.

...

# Chapter 692: Lightning Strike

---

Wenren Chuchu humped and then turned forcibly back.

The thunder striking sword light attack didn't stop after cutting dozens of men. It became even brighter and fiercer, flying towards Wenren Jianyin! It was sharp and powerful!

However, Wenren Jianyin's close guards had realized the situation already. They didn't even take any weapons. They didn't use any weapons to stop that attack. They just loudly shouted and then rushed over with their bodies to stop that attack.

The attack was shooting too fast that they didn't have time to draw their weapons anymore. That was why they would sacrifice their bodies to slow that sword attack down even just a bit!

As the sword light shined, the five guards were cut into dozens of pieces. They died with parted bodies. However, it slowed down a bit. The guards after those five finally had time to sway their weapons. One of them stabbed out a spear like it was a long dragon rushing out from the crowd, hitting right on that sword light attack.

The assassin humped. His splendid sword light suddenly became brighter again. It was so bright that people got hurt by watching it. That spear couldn't win the crash at all. It was ruined and turned into ashes. The owner of the spear spat out blood from the heavy blast. He fell out hard and nobody knew whether he was still alive or not.

The old man beside Wenren Jianyin stepped ahead with a solemn face. He had just thrown out a sword to kill the fleeing assassins. That was why he couldn't get back in time. Now that the long sword was back to his hand. He rushed out with the sword in full power. Two masses of sword lights crashed in the air. That was the most fiery impact.

- Bang! Bang! Bang! - It sounded again and again!

That was a direct one to one combat. The stronger one would win!

The Sky Origin Stage old man spat out blood, but he didn't step back a bit. He would die fighting.

The assassins also got hit. He seemed unable to stand firmly. Suddenly, he rolled over and then two streams of cold lights appeared under his two feet. They both shot out towards Wenren Jianyin. As the two lights shot out from his feet, he swayed his sword around his body and made a protection shield to defend himself.

- Dang! Dang! Dang! Dang! ... -

The sword qi built a shield on his body. Some soldiers tried to attack him with different weapons, however, all hit on the shield. Those soldiers spat out blood and were hit away.

That assassin finally couldn't hold it. He spat out blood after hitting off the enemies.

He was a strong man, but he used up his energy eventually. After fighting so many men, he finally got hurt!

However, though he was hurt, he could still kill some men. After spitting out blood, he jumped up again and threw out the sharp sword. He was making the same sword strike as the old Sky Origin Stage guy did earlier. His sword shot out like a shooting star aiming at Wenren Jianyin.

Surprisingly, there was another sword that showed up in his hand like magic. He didn't make another attack though. He just turned around and fled fast.

That was unexpected. It seemed so complicated, but in fact, it just happened during three or five breaths!

Wenren Chuchu overwhelmingly showed up and used her sword light shield to protect Wenren Jianyin while also killing the assassins at the same time. Wenren Jianyin hurriedly hid into the crowd. Four assassins died under the guards' and Wenren Chuchu's hands. The rest of the assassins fled away. Wenren Chuchu gave an order to the archers, but the arrows didn't kill all the fleeing assassins. She decided to catch them by herself. When she was about to wipe them up, another hidden assassin suddenly showed up and killed a lot.

Wenren Chuchu was powerful, but she had been rushing away.

Even though she had turned around as soon as she could, she stopped in there for a moment. Before she touched the floor, that assassin actually flew out rapidly, unbelievably fast!

Wenren Chuchu had made a sudden turnaround a moment ago, so she couldn't do it again so soon. She could only watch that man leave in an incredible speed.

When she stood on the floor and took a deep breath, she hurriedly jumped up again. In fact, she knew that she couldn't catch the assassin anymore, since that assassin was not a bit lower than her at all.

That assassin was wearing black clothes. He kept fleeing in low altitude. He moved fast ahead about two hundred meters every time he stepped on the floor. While he was going to step down, he stepped on two soldiers' heads. - Puff! - Two heads exploded.

Right after that, he rose up again and moved forward another two hundred meters. However, he didn't step on anything again. He directly became a stream of colorful sword light that flew out fast.

As the sword light shined, he had moved ahead over a thousand meters. He stood on a flag pole. While countless arrows were about to hit on him, the sword light shined again. This time, he rushed up to the sky and then disappeared.

Every move of his was finished during a blink.

Wenren Chuchu spent about three breaths to make the shield, draw out the sword, give the order, rush out, turn around and head back, stand on the floor and fly out again. That assassin only spent one breath to jump out, kill some soldiers, get stopped, rush again, be stopped again, flee away, disappear...

Only in one breath!

That was incredibly fast!

- Dang! -

The Sky Origin Stage old man swayed his sword with full power to knock away the flying sword. He felt numb in the hand. His sword nearly flew out of his hand. That flying sword was just moved aside a little bit and then shot into the crowd. What came after it was continual painful exclamation. That flying sword actually cut through over a dozen men before it finally stabbed in the floor. It was shining with colorful and cold lights, covered by blood.

A drop of blood went down along the blade.

It was silent around where the sword stopped!

This was a lightning strike attack!

Lightning struck and it shocked the world. Only one strike and it disappeared!

Ten thousand cavalry rushed in so casually and left thousands of men behind. Over a dozen good assassins started the attack after it, but turned out to be a cover for the last assassin! The final strike was aimed for that instant kill!

If Wenren Chuchu didn't warn Wenren Jianyin, he would have died for sure!

It was a trap in a trap in order to assassinate Wenren Jianyin!

...

# Chapter 693: Glorious!

---

Lord Xiao had planned everything. He knew Wenren Jianyin would check the dead after the invasion. He knew that he would especially check the wounds on the dead bodies. Wenren Jianyin usually did this. He always did.

The assassins from the Kingdom of Chen faked death when they just entered the camp. They just lied there under their enemies' weapons, risking their own lives for this assassination!

Two waves of assassination!

After the invasion, Wenren Jianyin loosened his alert...

If Wenren Chuchu didn't warn him and he just stepped over to the assassins...

How would that end?

The others thought of the possible consequences and felt terrified!

They looked at the glowing blood sword standing in the floor. They felt cold in the hearts. They were truly lucky survivors from a disaster! How terrifying!

What a fantastic scheme!

How horrible the assassins were!

That Sky Origin Stage old man stood straight up beside Wenren Jianyin. When he was just about to say something, he spat out blood instead.

He was a senior royal martial artist who served his kingdom for a long time. He was definitely one of the five strongest cultivators in the Kingdom of Lan-Feng. He had just fought twice against the assassin, with help from all those soldiers, however, he was seriously injured.

The last strike from the assassins was definitely powerful!

The old man was swaying. Suddenly, he was enlightened. He was terrified and shouted, "With one sword to overrun and conquer the world! That was Zhao Pingtian!"

"The No. 3 assassin in the world! The Killer King! Zhao Pingtian!"

The generals heard it and all turned pale in the face. They felt cold qi rising up from bottom of their bodies and climbing up along their backs like a cold poisonous snake.

[Zhao Pingtian?]

[It's him!]

This name wasn't only shocking in the world of assassins or the martial world!

In the world, among all the influential figures, this name was reverberating like thunder!

Zhao Pingtian!

If Zhao Pingtian wanted to kill somebody, nobody dared to guarantee he could be stopped.

No matter how powerful or influential the target was, nothing could stop Zhao Pingtian!

He was somebody equally powerful with Ning Biluo!

In fact, think about Wan Zhenghao, all the influential people in the world had the same thoughts about livings. You can enjoy your wealth as long as you are alive! Nothing meant anything to a dead man!

Zhao Pingtian was the one who could easily take your life. He was the best in this!

However, nobody expected him to fight for the Kingdom of Chen.

In fact, they were not only surprised. They couldn't understand

it. Zhao Pingtian didn't have any sense of national identity. Everybody in the martial world knew it. Why would he show up in the army of the Kingdom of Chen?

That was such a weird thing.

Wenren Jian didn't want his men to panic, so he didn't tell the others Ning Biluo was also serving Kingdom of Chen in this war. If the soldiers knew that the two most powerful assassins were both in the opponent's army, they would all lose faith in this battle!

Wenren Chuchu looked solemn. A strange expression showed in her eyes.

[Humph!]

[Ning Biluo, Zhao Pingtian... Feng Zhiling, the best assassins you have are both here.]

[Where are you?]

She gritted her teeth...

[Who are you?]

[Humph!]

...

Ye Xiao looked calm and cold in the eyes while watching the men who just returned.

"Brothers, you've had a long day." Ye Xiao announced rewards for the men and then he felt disappointed after all.

Zhu Chenggong was so excited already. His face seemed glowing.

Ye Xiao truly was satisfied with the result of this fight. In his plan, Zhao Pingtian could at least badly wound Wenren Jianyin.

It was better to put him down in injury than nothing.

However, nothing really happened. Wenren Jianyin was totally safe. So was their important generals.

Ye Xiao's plan failed. It didn't achieve what he was planning for. It was a failure. Ye Xiao took it as a complete failure.

He sighed. "All hard work for nothing!"

"What?" Zhu Chenggong couldn't believe it. He stared at Commander Ye with his widely opened eyes.

"It is such a shame that we failed to kill Wenren Jianyin." Ye Xiao

blandly smiled. "But we will have another chance."

"Commander, I mean... You are..." Zhu Chenggong didn't know how to put it. "Do you really want to kill Wenren Jianyin just by one invasion? What we have done today is already a glorious achievement!"

"Ah?" Ye Xiao couldn't understand it. "Vice-Commander Zhu, what we got is just a small success. It actually doesn't seem like a success at all. Why are you so satisfied? Are you misunderstanding the situation? Wenren Jianyin was attacked, but he didn't get hurt. We didn't kill any of their important figures. What glory do we have?"

Zhu Chenggong's face turned red. "Misunderstand? I did not! We have been losing the battle all these days. Our soldiers are losing morale. This invasion means a lot to the Western Army! By the way...

"It is understandable that the young generation is always aggressive in fights, but you are still short for experience in the battle, Commander. You missed one important thing! After this fight, Wenren Jianyin would definitely not show up in the field! We have more than one good assassin. He may lose his life if he shows up in the battlefield. Do you know what does it mean to us? That means they may have a huge problem passing on informations as their commander isn't with them!"

"Let's put it in simpler words. If Wenren Jianyin showed up fighting with his men, he will know about the situation in the field real-time. He can make adjustment in a short time. He can

command his army smoothly. Situation in the field changes every second, but he can handle it well if he can keep watching it. However, if he just hide behind the field and command his men by receiving information then giving out orders, it won't be efficient enough. The transmission speed and veracity of information will be affected.

"That will be great for us. The situation is changing every second. As long as they make one mistake because of that, we may be able to crush them using the flaw. It will become possible to hold the Iron Peak! Kingdom of Lan-Feng will never get even one step into our kingdom!"

...

# Chapter 694: Have to Hurry!

---

A long speech proved that Zhu Chenggong was really thrilled!

"Hold the Iron Peak? So that is what you want?" Ye Xiao turned to him, staring at him and emphasizing the word 'hold'.

"Absolutely! To hold the Iron Peak. That is already a huge achievement, a great contribution," Zhu Chenggong answered like he was telling something commonsensible.

Ye Xiao shook his head. He felt awkward. "Maybe I am being too aggressive, just like you said. What I want is never just to hold Iron Peak. I want to defeat them! I even want to wipe out the entire Lan-Feng army! That is what I want. If only to hold Iron Peak, why do you need me? Why would I come?"

Zhu Chenggong was stunned. "My dear commander, it is close to impossible to just hold the Iron Peak. If you didn't arrive in time, we would have been broken through already. However, even though you are here with the men under your lead, we are no more than two hundred thousand men. Kingdom of Lan-Feng, they have more than one million strong men here. They are a lot outnumbering us..."

"Please, commander, no rush. Like I just said, it is good that you take it aggressively, but we cannot be reckless on this. We are in a war. Do not underestimate your enemy." Zhu Chenggong was worried.

He felt that Commander Ye was over confident on this.

[He actually wants to defeat the one million troops with less than two hundred thousand men?]

[Not just to defeat, but to destroy, to wipe out... is that a proper ambition?]

[It sounds more like a silly dream to me!]

[Or just simply seeking for death?]

Even though the invasion had given Wenren Jianyin a lesson and a sense of danger, it was just a one-time thing. There wasn't any real damage to the Lan-Feng army. The thousands of men they lost meant nothing.

In fact, Ye Xiao had lost a lot in this. More than three thousand of their good men died in their. They had only less than two hundred thousand men in total, and Lan-Feng army had over one million. That was a big percentage to lose!

Ye Xiao looked at Vice-Commander Zhu. He really didn't know what to say to him anymore.

[Do you think I want to hurry? Of course I know if we hold it long enough, there will be more men coming to support from other battles. My father is the best we can get if we can wait. But I don't have much time to waste! Three months. That's all I have here.]

Besides, I really need to gather some soul power now...]

[I don't have much time!]

[I have to hurry!]

"I have decided. Vice-Commander, there is nothing more to discuss!" Ye Xiao was being tough. He was so solemn and didn't give him chance to argue. "As a man of war, to sacrifice is our duty! If we can't conquer land, we fail. If we can't take back the land we lost and only keep defending ourselves, it is our shame!"

Zhu Chenggong opened his mouth but couldn't say a word. He was ashamed.

What Ye Xiao said made him feel disgraced. He couldn't deny it.

The land that they lost was exactly lost from his hands.

At the same time, he was a bit annoyed too. [Do you think I want to lose it?]

Ye Xiao tried to be soft. "Don't think too much into it though, Vice-Commander Zhu. I understand how you feel. I am not judging you. However, it is our land. No matter how or why we lost it, we have a reason to fight for it. We have to take it back! We have to take the land back for our kingdom!"

"We have to take it back! Our land! Our pride! Our victory!"

Ye Xiao tapped on Zhu Chenggong's shoulder and then casually walked out.

Zhu Chenggong stood there. His face started to be covered by glorious glow.

[That is right.]

[We must take it back!]

[I don't want to be a defeated general!]

[Failed and failed, so what? We will get the victory eventually!]

[My honor, pride, glory, I need them back. What to do?]

[Fight!]

[Victory!]

[Our honor!]

"What could be worse! What I have is no more than just a miserable life! Nothing could be worse than death!" He gritted his teeth as he said, "But if I survive by luck, I get the victory!"

Then he left the tent too.

...

When Ye Xiao walked out, he called all the generals at once to gather in the main tent. He gave several orders for battle.

"We taste the first victory. Next, we won't just keep holding inside the building and wait for their attack! We strike in advance! We strike them with surprise after the victory we just got!"

"One hundred thousand men part into twenty groups!"

"You keep harassing enemy's camp!"

"Collect all the arrows back from the field. No matter where you are, archers don't stop giving them arrow strikes! If you are running out of arrows, go pick some from the field or ask our supply for more! The more the better! I don't want to see the arrow attack stop!"

"We are not having a tough fight this time. Do not start a long fight! I want only one thing. You hit them, you leave. Make sure you will be safe and harass them as frequently as you can. I want them lose time to rest! I want them to run here and there without stopping!"

That was a crazy plan. If the Kingdom of Lan-Feng decided to just get on a final strike all together, the one hundred thousand men outside might all be gone.

However, Ye Xiao had decided.

It was indeed a perfect time to march for attack. The invasion and assassination took place in the afternoon. Kingdom of Lan-Feng must still be in shock. They would never expect another strike going on them again so soon.

After all, it was suicide to rush into a million troops with just over a hundred thousand men.

However, that was exactly what Ye Xiao wanted to do. He wouldn't give his enemy what they expected.

"Song Jue!"

"Yes!"

"You and Vice-Commander Zhu go rush in their camp and stir a disturbance in it. Do not stay long!"

"Yes!"

"Ning Biluo!"

"Yes!"

"You and..., just do the same thing!"

"Yes!"

"Zhao Pingtian!"

"Yes!"

"Liu Changjun!"

"Yes!"

...

Ye Xiao assigned all his good assassins into different squads to strike along with the soldiers. That made sure every squad had a sharp point!

He wanted these squads with sharp points to break the defense line of the enemy, so that his army could go rush into the enemy's camp and start the fight!

...

After the time of a few pots of tea, horse steps sounded up like

thunder storms in the darkness!

Murderous shouts sounded everywhere.

At the moment, the camp of the Kingdom of Lan-Feng had just stopped cooking. The sky was in the darkest moment.

Everything was in silence. Suddenly, horse steps sounded like thunder from everywhere.

"What... They actually made an attack now!"

...

# Chapter 695: Twenty Sharp Daggers!

---

Wenren Jianyin's face turned dark. "This Lord Xiao is truly bodacious and crazy! Does he think I am that easy to put down?"

"That goes too over!"

"Prepare fully for the fight!"

"Ma Wupeng!"

"Yes!"

"Listen to their sound. It must be a strike of a big number of men. They should be short for manpower to guard the gate. Take fifty thousand good men with you. Ignore the harassment and go directly to attack the gate!"

"Yes!"

"Ling Dongsheng!"

"Yes!"

"Take one hundred thousand men with you. Follow Ma Wupeng and support him any time he needs!"

"Yes!"

"Han Shangyun! Dong Qiliang! Zhang Yunduan!"

"Yes!" Three answered at the same time.

"We should attack their four gates at the same time! Fake attacks on three sides while one real on one. Ma Wupeng takes the main attack and you guys do the fake attacks! Just distract their guarding force!"

"Yes!"

"Prepare ambush around our camp! Get ready for the incoming enemy!"

"Yes!"

"Expendable Team ready!"

"Yes!"

"Confidential Team, come with me!"

"Yes!"

Wenren Jianyin reacted fast and vicious. When he noticed what

was going on, he made the best decision to deal with the surprise attack.

Outside the camp of the Lan-Feng army.

Song Jue loudly shouted, "Brothers, kill them all!"

He swayed the broad sword in his hand. A blood-colored light showed up in the sky. It rushed forward to the gate of the camp. Suddenly, the gate was rolled up to the sky, broken!

That was only the beginning. That sword light didn't stop when it hit the gate. Countless bodies flew up to the sky because of the strike of the sword light. They were swaying in the air with exclamation before falling down on the floor. Blood rushed up in a mess, truly a splendifin scene to behold.

Steward Song wouldn't care if it was splendid or not. He rushed into the camp first!

He swayed his sword again, chopping off countless legs and arms off the enemies. He laughed arrogantly and shouted like thunders. He was finally back to the battlefield. The familiar smell of blood aroused the maliciousness deep inside his heart!

It didn't take him long to become fierce and overwhelming!

Nobody could be more powerful than him when his maliciousness was aroused in the battle. With just a few small

strikes, he killed all those who dared to try to stop him. Even the horse under him felt the vigor. It was also doing its best it could to fight with its master. It could step out ten meters at the beginning, but was able to rush out dozens of meters at the moment!

Song Jue was like a god and his horse was like a dragon!

The horse was thrilled. Song Jue was getting more and more excited. He couldn't hold the fever in his heart no more!

He shouted loudly and then jumped off the horse, rushing towards to the most crowded area. With one sword strike, he cleaned up all those who dared to stand in his way. He kept striking ahead, and the enemies were falling one after another!

Five thousand men saw their leader fight so overwhelmingly. They were spirited. Almost at the same time, they all became extremely excited. Their hairs flew up and they kept yelling with fierceness. They rushed into the crowd vigorously too!

Song Jue was brilliant in martial art. He kept striking with his sword and cut into the central area of the camp!

- Shoot! Shoot! Shoot! -

The sky was lit up like two lightning strikes crossed in the sky. Hundreds of streams of blood rushed up to the sky! Only within an instant, it became like hell in flames!

Song Jue and his five thousand men were like a burning knife stabbing into a cold butter!

They cut through into the crowd in an overwhelming manner!

On the other side.

Ning Biluo's long sword swayed in front of him like star river splashing!

On the other side, Zhao Pingtian was holding a knife in the left while a sword was in the right. Strike by strike, every attack was to take out lives! He was marching forward crazily!

Liu Changjun was a bit weaker, however, he wasn't moving any slower than Ning Biluo and Zhao Pingtian at all.

The twenty squads were like twenty sharp knives cutting into the camp of the Kingdom of Lan-Feng from different directions. No one among them was left behind!

They were all aiming at the same place!

They would gather in the camp and then kill their way out from different directions!

That was such an insane and risky battle strategy!

It was crazy to divide these men into twenty squads and attack the enemy's camp at the same time from different directions. That was not a smart plan. They were fighting enemies who had much more men after all. It was the least reasonable plan. However, because they made the attack in a perfect timing, it was totally out of enemy's expectation. That made it better.

But, to gather the twenty squads in the center of the camp made it worse again. The enemy wouldn't always be unprepared. They would have done things to deal with the invasion. Ye Xiao pointed the central point of the camp as the place the squads gathered. They might fall into a surrounded trap because of it!

Ye Xiao's plan was truly hard to understand. The last step of the plan was not to let the squads fight a way out together. They fought out still in twenty squads from different directions. That was suicide. No one dared to put their men in such risk!

However, Ye Xiao did. He knew his men were all marvelous figures!

He didn't have many men, but he had enough good ones!

However, if it was any other commanders who also had the same good men in the army, they still wouldn't dare to do this!

...

The Kingdom of Lan-Feng's army had gotten through the

surprised time. They were finally prepared for the defense.

They had already set up the ambush!

Within one day, surprise attacks hit on them several times. Wenren Jianyin, the famous general in the world, was confused. He really couldn't understand why his enemy dared to fight so recklessly. To him, what Ye Xiao did was exactly putting his men's heads on the edge of the knife! It would only take one tiny mistake to make him and his men fall into great loss!

However, if he let Ye Xiao finish what he started, it wouldn't end well for him either!

Thus, he decided not to worry about being assassinated. He stood high on top of a chariot, watching the entire battlefield.

It was no longer the Sky Origin Stage old man standing beside him. Instead, Wenren Chuchu stood beside him, wearing white clothes!

Her eyes were cold and sharp. She put her hand on the sword. She was covered by fierce spiritual qi!

She couldn't move recklessly. She knew that as long as she left her uncle and took part in a fight away from him, what she would get after the fight would only be her uncle's dead body!

That was a certain consequence!

...

# Chapter 696: Tough Fights in Two Sides!

---

Wenren Chuchu knew exactly how powerful Feng Zhiling's men were. There were so many desperate assassins on the enemy's side!

She couldn't risk her uncle's life!

The most important person in her side was not the princess. It was the Commander, Wenren Jianyin!

He was the soul of the army!

If he was killed, the million troops of Kingdom of Lan-Feng would become acephalous and disunited. That would lead to a great loss!

A foolish commander kills thousands of soldiers; soldiers without a commander become a bunch of rubble and chaos!

No matter how good the army was, without a good commander, it was just a bunch of mob!

She couldn't let Wenren Jianyin die!

The soldiers were moving in groups in the camp under Wenren Jianyin's command.

They started to prepare the ambush against the men of the

Kingdom of Chen who were gathering over to the center.

However, the leaders of them were all killing gods. No matter how dangerous it was to them, how good the defense lines were...

As long as their leaders waved their swords, soldiers were down!

The ambush wouldn't work if those leaders were there!

They were nearly invincible!

Wenren Jianyin shouted, "Gather the elites! We need to cut off their heads first!"

He was so experienced. Of course, he knew that the one hundred thousand men were not the real threat. What mattered really were those leaders!

Each of them was able to fight against ten thousand by themselves!

[Where does Kingdom of Chen get all these men? Isn't it too unbelievable?]

Such leaders made the army strong. Even a bunch of mobs could become a disciplined army. Every soldier could become a lunatic killer under the influence of those leaders!

A useless leader leads his men to death, while a capable one makes his men great warriors!

However, such army had the same flaw!

If their leaders were killed, the squads would become as weak as sheep!

That was why it was never the soldiers that mattered. It was always the leaders!

As long as Wenren Jianyin could get the leaders killed, he won this fight!

Superior cultivators of the Kingdom of Lan-Feng jumped up and rushed over to the center area. Apparently, they were ready to kill the leaders of their enemies there as Wenren Jianyin commanded!

On the other side, horse steps sounded like thunders. In the moonlight of the dark night, the army was like a dragon with fury rushing towards the Iron Peak!

They gathered at four sides at the gates of Iron Peak and started to attack!

Ye Xiao stood high on the wall. He looked at the enemies attacking from four sides. For the first time, he felt the cruelty of war!

In the war, human lives meant less than a piece of paper!

Every second, there were lives vanishing in the darkness.

People kept falling off the wall.

- Bang! -

A ladder was destroyed. People fell off the ladder, but before they touched the floor, they were hit by the flying arrows and became hedgehogs.

Under the wall, there were lots of enemies crowding. On the wall, lots of his own men tried to defend the tower. Everyone's eyes were red.

People died at every second, no matter on the wall or under the wall.

One sword strike and a bunch of men were cut down.

The empty area would be filled up immediately.

The crowd would be destroyed again, and new guys filled up the area again...

Dead bodies piled up on the floor. More and more living men became dead bodies being stepped on.

No matter who they were before they died, they were simply dead bodies after their death, or a pile of broken meat!

Life and death were so close!

There was just a tiny gap of time.

An instant decided life and death!

- Boom! -

A soldier of the Kingdom of Lan-Feng showed up his head on the wall. He kept defending himself against the attacks and tried to step on the wall. His armor was so strong and arrows couldn't get through. Some arrows just got stuck on his armor and that made him look like a hedgehog. As soon as he climbed up, he started to sway his sword to kill.

He became a supporting point for the soldiers behind him. More soldiers rushed up, yelling and fighting. Soldiers of the Kingdom of Chen also gathered over to this place to kill those invaders. However, they couldn't knock that heavy-armored man. They were about to lose the wall.

Ye Xiao sighed and then flew over like a breeze. - Shoot, shoot, shoot... -

The Lan-Feng soldiers who had just climbed up the wall were thrown off the wall by Ye Xiao. He picked up a spear and ran along the wall swaying it. It was surely just a piece of cake for him to sweep off the ordinary men on the wall.

After a while, all the ladders on the wall were destroyed!

One by one, they fell off the wall.

Over one hundred assassins from the Ling-Bao Hall were guarding different places on the wall under Ye Xiao's order. They fought like they were cutting vegetables, killed the enemies and threw them off the wall.

However, the enemies were still rushing up like they would love to die. They kept fighting and fighting every second without a stop. Every assassin had to deal with over a dozen enemies at the same time.

Ye Xiao kept rushing along the wall and destroying the ladders. Lots of emotions filled his chest.

[No wonder.]

[No wonder those retired soldiers treated death as nothing important. After the experience in a war, you will find that every minute after the war is a blessing from the heavens!]

[Naturally, death doesn't seem so scary.]

[What to worry for if even death is nothing to fear for? Nothing is worse than dying in a pile of minced meat, isn't it?]

[After all, they are still alive.]

[That is much better than those who died in the war!]

[That is why those senior soldiers always look so tough. In fact, after all that they have seen in the life and death battles, they naturally become tough!]

Ye Xiao moved like the whirlwind, spending less than one hour to move around of the wall on all sides. Thousands of ladders the enemies had put on the wall were destroyed by himself.

Soldiers of the Kingdom of Chen saw their Commander being so powerful, so they were spirited and thrilled!

At the moment, there were strange sounds from the sky.

He looked to the sky, only to find countless giant rocks flying over like hailstones.

...

# Chapter 697: Ashes to Ashes!

---

The enemy saw Commander Ye being unbelievably powerful. They knew they would never be able to get on the wall by those ladders, so they used the mangonels. Countless huge rocks flew over and hit the wall. Soldiers didn't wait for their commander's order and hid into the shelters they prepared earlier.

Suddenly, men on the wall were gone.

Ye Xiao was standing where he was alone.

Rocks hit over from time to time, but he didn't get away. He just punched out, and the rocks would become ashes flying in the air.

Huge sounds resounded around him. Some huge rocks hit the wall and the Iron Peak seemed shaking because of it.

After the time to brew a pot of tea, the floor in front of the wall was covered by a layer of rocks.

Horns sounded again. Dozens of thousands men rushed up again under the flying rocks.

- Pah, pah, pah... -

Ladders were set on the wall again. Lots of Lan-Feng soldiers climbed up the wall like monkeys.

The rocks were still flying over like rainstorm, however, the enemies would actually risk their lives under the rocks to get on the wall.

"Defense!"

Ye Xiao shouted. Suddenly, he became a mass of white shadow and shot out hundreds of meters by one step. He directly flew out from the top of the tower.

Wherever he passed, the ladders were broken and turned into ashes.

Commander Ye actually left the commanding spot.

"Commander, you must not go out there!"

A soldier who had been staying with Ye Xiao was nearly scared out of his wit.

[How can a commander go out and fight himself?]

[No matter how powerful you are, it is not a wise choice to go out and join the battle! What if you get killed? We will lose the battle for it!]

No matter what he said, Ye Xiao just did it his own way. As the

white clothes flew in the air, he had rushed out hundreds of meters out. He rushed to the center of the crowd of the enemies. His sword emitted bright lights and rushed over to attack the crowded men.

He was aiming at those mangonels!

He realized those were powerful weapons to break the wall!

Iron Peak was in danger under the attacks from those mangonels.

Those mangonels had to be destroyed if he wanted Iron Peak to be protected safely!

It happened within seconds. The sword in his hand suddenly shined. The sword attacked in the shape of a circular sector. The enemies on the left didn't have time to figure out what happened before they were all cut down. After that, sword attack came wave after wave.

The enemies on the right realized what it was but still couldn't defend themselves in the second wave of sword attacks.

Enemies on two sides were all killed. Some died in confusion while the other in consciousness!

His sword attack cleaned up an area in the shape of a semicircle.

However, it was filled by more soldiers soon.

He didn't slow down a bit, though. He just rushed out hundreds of meters, with his sword swaying here and there. The sword light went pass those mangonels and ruined them all into broken pieces.

He got it, and then rushed towards the other mangonels!

"Stop him!" Somebody shouted.

Someone had a pair of sharp eyes. He recognized Ye Xiao. "That is Ye Xiao! Do not let him go! Kill him! Kill him! Seize chance! Take him down and the Kingdom of Chen will fall! Tonight is the night the Kingdom of Chen collapses!"

A decree was passed down. "Whoever kills Ye Xiao will be promoted three grades, granted thousands taels of gold and a high position!"

That was like a bucket of fuel pouring into the fire.

Countless soldiers were yelling and rushing over to Ye Xiao!

Ye Xiao humped. His white clothes flickered like a white horse rushing out from a crowd. He was stepping on the heads of those men. Wherever he went over, heads exploded. - Pah, pah, pah pah... -

Sword lights shined like stars while he was moving. Over a dozen more mangonels were broken too.

Ye Xiao rushed left and right, like moving in an empty area. He casually came and left among the tens of thousands of men in the army. Over a hundred mangonels were broken before he left in a beautiful way.

He didn't get hurt in any way. Even his white clothes was still clean. Nothing stained it!

With a shout, he made dozens of white shadows of himself while he was moving fast back to the wall of Iron Peak. He stood on the top of the wall!

He was back to the commander's spot!

He went out and returned within such a short time, but what he had done was marvelous.

The mangonels that could have cause great damage to the wall were all destroyed by Ye Xiao at the moment!

There were over a million men in the army of the Kingdom of Lan-Feng. They were fighting inside the territory of the Kingdom of Chen after all. Supply was always a problem for them. It was rather difficult to get more mangonels!

Besides, Ye Xiao had delivered a clear message by what he had

just done. [Even if you can get more mangonels right away, it won't help. I can just go out and slaughter around again. That will sweep them all out!]

[You want to take Iron Peak?]

[Fine!]

[Sacrifice your men!]

[Nothing else works for you now. I won't let it happen.]

[What I can do is much more vicious than you can imagine!]

It took him only a short time to make that strike. However, what he had done was shocking. The mangonels were all broken. Enemies started to focus more on climbing the wall instead. After all, they didn't need to worry about the flying rocks anymore. Men on Ye Xiao's side were even more spirited. They had been suppressed by the rocks and had to defend against the soldiers on the wall at the same time. It was tough. However, their commander destroyed all the mangonels now!

The enemies didn't have a lot of ladders. The wall was still strong and firm. It became such an easy job to hold the Iron Peak now!

The soldiers of the Kingdom of Chen were all thrilled. They kept knocking the enemies back like they suddenly got possessed by spirits of some great warriors!

The soldiers of the Kingdom of Lan-Feng realized that they couldn't do this anymore, although they were still fighting and risking their lives for it!

[They are occupying the positive position. The wall is tough. Our mangonels are all broken. It is close to impossible to break their wall. We are running out of ladders here, and we need more soldiers to come.]

[We can't march ahead, but do we have to stay where we are easy targets for their archers?]

...

# Chapter 698: Cross the Battle!

---

The army of the Kingdom of Lan-Feng looked fierce and tough, but in fact was losing faith in their hearts...

When they saw Ye Xiao destroy all the mangonels in the army by himself, come and go as he wished, they felt disheartened!

The enemies' commander rushed into their army which had over one million men, but they failed to even touch him a bit. Moreover, he killed as many men as he wanted and destroyed all the mangonels on his own. They felt it was hopeless to conquer the Iron Peak, which was under the protection of Ye Xiao...

They felt that it was just a dream!

Their morale was gone...

On the other side, the tough fight continued.

Song Jue was still fighting overwhelmingly. He and his men rushed ahead in the camp of Kingdom of the Lan-Feng. Zhu Chenggong felt that his blood was boiling in the vein just watching Song Jue.

[This is so good!]

[I have never felt so good before!]

[We are actually running in the camp of the strong enemy just as we wish! This must be the favorite of a man of war!]

[I wouldn't regret even if I will die the next moment!]

[I would die with a smile for this!]

At the moment, the enemies suddenly moved apart. A stream of sword light shot out from the enemies all of a sudden.

It was not an attack from the Kingdom of Lan-Feng though. In fact, only Wenren Chuchu could make an attack like this on their side. No one else could do that!

In fact, it was Ning Biluo. They had rushed through the camp and arrived here. Wherever he went, men were cut down and horses fled. Nobody could stop him!

Song Jue shouted and spurred his horse. He directly went pass Ning Biluo, without even saying hello. They just led their own men to cross each other, marching towards the direction where the other had come from!

That was Ye Xiao's plan!

It was fine if they wanted to have a big fight, but they should not waste their time in fighting.

Twenty squads fought from different directions to go through the camp. They struck the camp in different ways. Although it was a camp of over a million men, it only needed less than two hundred thousand men to cut through their formations. One million men were not easy to command and make them react in a short time. As long as the twenty squads successfully got through the camp and met each other in the center area, the formation they set in the camp would be broken soon!

Twenty squads, two in a pair, rushing out facing each other in a straight line.

Whenever one pair of squad met each other in the center, it was time to retreat and it was time for the victory!

If they kept fighting inside it, not going out, they would be surrounded by the enemies and fall into a dangerous situation. Many men would die. Even all of them would die.

At the moment, the Kingdom of Lan-Feng side had enough time to arrange the ambush.

To rush along one straight line in and out and then get back inside the wall was the primary choice!

That was Ye Xiao's plan.

After Ning Biluo and Song Jue met in the center, soon Liu

Changjun and Zhao Pingtian met each other too. They gave a hint by looking at each other and then rushed away like crazy. They just rushed across each other.

The rest of the squads all met in the camp and then killed their way out!

- Boom! -

Song Jue got out of the camp like an angry dragon. He and his men together were running fast back to the Iron Peak.

Apparently, he was a bit annoyed that Ning Biluo arrived at the center earlier than him. He was much stronger than Ning Biluo in cultivation after all. Now, he wanted to do something to make it up, so he decided to be the first to lead his men back to Iron Peak!

On the other hand, Ning Biluo wanted to be the first back to Iron Peak too.

However, there was one thing Ning Biluo was definitely worse than Song Jue!

The men who followed Song Jue remained over four thousand! In other words, only less than one thousand of the five thousand men died in the camp of the Kingdom of Chen! That was an incredible miracle!

The men who had been following Song Jue were all back from

blood and fire. Their eyes were fierce and cold. The fight they had been through was much more valuable than a hundred fights in the battle!

Under the agitation of their leader, they all had fought like they were blessed by the god of war. They seemed to have greatly improved in martial art as they killed their way all along, feeling only extreme comfort but not even a bit of exhaustion!

They wished they could return and slaughter around again.

They knew they should be exhausted that they would fall off the horses at any second, but in their minds, they were refreshed. They couldn't even believe it themselves. They actually still thought about getting back to the fight again after such an exhausting battle!

...

The fight on the Iron Peak tower continued. However, it looked drastic, but it was not. It was a certain victory for the Kingdom of Chen.

Song Jue was leading his men riding fast back to the tower. The men of the Kingdom of Lan-Feng didn't dare to chase them!

Why would they chase after a group of lunatics?

Twenty squads out, eighteen back!

Two of them were lost in the camp.

The army of the Kingdom of Lan-Feng wasn't completely useless. Wenren Jianyin's plan worked, not on all squads, however, but still destroyed two of them. Both leaders were killed by the siege of Lan-Feng superior cultivators. However, six of them died for it!

After that, the rest of the superior cultivators were the true gold after polish. They were all sharp swords after hammer-hardening!

They could handle any kind of combats and face any strong enemies!

In the sky over the battlefield, there were lots of soul power floating in the air. Ye Xiao stood on the wall. He could feel the energy flowing over to him like tide, entering the Space.

The ambience was, however, getting less and less gloomy.

The soul power that was from those who just died in this war was absorbed out of the place. In fact, the soul power which came from all the death in history was all swept out by Ye Xiao's Boundless Space.

Song Jue and the others returned to the tower like whirlwind. They arrived at the wall and found the enemies crowding around the wall. They just rushed into the crowd and killed a way in.

The enemies became surrounded on two sides.

Even though the soldiers on the wall couldn't really make any attacks but only defend, they caused great stress on the enemies!

Men of the Kingdom of Lan-Feng spent a long time but still couldn't damage the wall, let alone take it down. They had lost their morale already. Now, they were hit from outside all of a sudden, being surrounded, so they immediately retreated.

The eighteen squads gathered over to the gate like tides. Song Jue and over a hundred others stopped outside the army on the horses. They were emitting murderous qi which rushed up to the sky.

Tens of thousands soldiers moved so fast into the gate.

Men of the Kingdom of Lan-Feng had thought about getting into the gate after them, but they wisely gave up the silly thought after they saw Song Jue and the others standing there.

It took them no longer than the time of half pot of tea, and the eighteen squads were all back inside the tower.

Song Jue and the others sneered at the same time and then turned their horses over to get in the Iron Peak.

It was midnight when everything was done.

It was jubilation inside the wall, while disaster outside.

In the camp of the Kingdom of Lan-Feng, fires burned out dozens of miles. It couldn't be suppressed.

Wenren Jianyin's face looked pale.

"I have heard that Ye Nantian's sworn brother, Song Jue, is a brave and strong warrior. Now I know people are telling the truth." He sighed.

...

# Chapter 699: Not Enough Men!

---

In fact, what Wenren Jianying just said was still underestimating Song Jue.

He just wouldn't say any better about him, because he didn't want his men to lose faith.

Song Jue was much more than just a brave and strong warrior. He was totally invincible!

Luckily, he was just a good martial artist. He didn't really spread his fame in the military, so he didn't get on the list of the world's famous generals. That was why the kingdoms in the world didn't pay much attention to him.

If Song Jue was a little better in commanding an army, he might be another Ye Nantian for the Kingdom of Chen!

He could be another Ye Nantian, but only a bloodies version!

That was horrible to even imagine.

In the camp of the Kingdom of Lan-Feng, the generals were all gloomy.

It was a dishonorable and shameful loss!

Only over one hundred thousand men killed through their camp and turned it into a mess, and then left in a beautiful way.

Even the water in all the lakes and rivers couldn't wash their shame this day!

"It wasn't our fault." Wenren Jianyin made a long sigh. "It is not our men's fault. Their soldiers are regular, however, their leaders are too sharp. The two that we destroyed eventually costed us six Sky Origin Stage good men... They have much stronger men than us! It is not our fault!"

"Do not push yourself too hard." Wenren Jianyin blandly smiled. "What they did. That was horrible and efficient, but it is a one-time thing."

"How come?" a general asked confusedly.

"Because... they don't have enough men for this!" Wenren Chuchu answered it. "They only have about two hundred thousand... No. Less than two hundred thousand men now. The fight today was a victory for them indeed, but... they should have lost over forty percent of their operating troops!"

"In other words, at least forty thousand men died here in our place among the one hundred thousand!" She coldly spoke, "No matter how fierce and brave they are, if they will lose forty thousand men at a time, how many times can they do this again? With the two hundred... No. One hundred sixty thousand men?"

"We lost it this time. It was a shameful loss, but our camp is still firm and strong. Even if they come a few more times, the camp will stand solid. We may lose more than they do, but we have much more than they can spend. They can't afford it!"

She blandly spoke.

"That's right. Check the death count. I need to know exactly how many of them died in this fight!" Wenren Jianyin's eyes lit up.

...

What Wenren Chuchu said was exactly the biggest problem that caused Ye Xiao a headache.

Men died!

Not only one's energy would be used up, but also the number of men would get smaller!

It was a great victory, what he just had done in the battlefield!

It was a wonderful victory!

It was even a miracle in some way.

One hundred thousand men ran through the camp of an army of

over one million men and returned with victory.

Less than forty thousand men died. It was a undoubtedly victory in any case.

Not to mention it was a fight against Wenren Jianyin, who was such a famous commander in the world. Even Su Dingguo and Ye Nantian would applaud for it.

However, Ye Xiao wouldn't. He was in deep concerns. He couldn't stop being worried.

He wasn't being sensitive.

He knew that he couldn't afford such consumption.

They had killed a lot of enemies in this fight. That was true. The enemy lost over four times more men than he did, let alone the food, weapons, and other resources the enemy lost during the fight in their camp. However, even though the Kingdom of Lan-Feng had lost about one hundred and fifty thousand men, they still had over one million left!

Wenren Jianyin just lost over one hundred and several dozens thousand men in his one million and four hundred thousand! It was not a small number, but it didn't make a huge damage to him.

On Ye Xiao's side, even though he got the victory and he lost less than forty thousand men, it was forty out of one hundred and

eighty!

Even if he could keep winning it, he would lose every man he had in the end. His enemy might lose three hundred thousand, or four hundred thousand, or many more! But, it wouldn't be more than five hundred thousand though!

If he kept doing this, when Ye Xiao's men all died, he could only kill less than five hundred thousand men of the enemy!

However, in that situation, he would be the only man left in his side, but the enemy would still have over eight hundred thousand men to fight with. They could still march to the center of the kingdom and destroy the capital of Kingdom of Chen!

Ye Xiao was reading the report. He sorted out every number.

Looking at his men all covered with a full round of braveness and murderous qi, he only smiled bitterly.

"I can't tell others. I can't tell no one, no matter who he is. It will only strike our own morale! God damn it... If I have five hundred thousand men, I can make that happen again and again until they completely lose their faith in this. That will be the time when I crash Wenren Jianyin! But one hundred and eighty thousand, that is all I got!"

"There are thirty-eight thousand men who died on the wall today. Seven thousand died inside. That took away forty-five

thousand more from me!"

"Heavens. In other words, I have only one hundred and thirty-five thousand men! If I make attacks like that again and again, I can do three more times maximum. Then I will be the only living man in my side after all victories! God damn it!"

He bitterly smiled. "What a joke!"

Song Jue and Zhu Chenggong knew it. They were experienced in battles. Of course, they knew it. They got into Ye Xiao's tent and wanted to discuss about it with Ye Xiao, even though they were exhausted.

"Capable woman can't cook without food!" Zhu Chenggong freaked out.

"This is b\*llshit. We have a perfect combat scheme and we can do it well. We have good men to lead the charging assault. We have a great chance to defeat the enemy. But we are short for one basic thing that we barely lacked of in the past! We need more men! That is an unbelievable thing in the Kingdom of Chen! Unforgivable!"

He nearly started to hit himself on the wall!

That was a good chance to avenge his admired Great General Wu Gonglie, but he just couldn't seize it because there were not enough men! What an afflictive fact!

...

# Chapter 700: Headache in Both Sides!

---

"Vice-Commander Zhu, if we recruit new soldiers right now, how many can we recruit?" Ye Xiao frowned.

"Close to none." Zhu Chenggong lowered his head like a rooster who lost its fight. He despondently spoke, "We have never stopped trying to recruit more soldiers in the recent half year in order to defend against Wenren Jianyin. After Commander Wu died and since we arrived here, we have gone out for recruitment three times. There are no adult men within a hundred miles to join us..."

Ye Xiao and Song Jue understood before he finished.

No more!

No more strong men.

"What if we try our best holding it here and wait for supports from the kingdom?" Song Jue frowned and asked.

Ye Xiao and Zhu Chenggong both bitterly smiled.

Kingdom of Chen had sent every man up to the battle. Even royal guards had joined the west. There was no more support from the kingdom. If there was anybody else, they wouldn't let Ye Xiao to lead the army.

At the very least, even if there were people who could help, Ye Xiao had offended all the officials in the court right before he marched for battle!

Who would come to help him at this moment?

The officials wanted him to die as a revenge to their sons, grandsons, nephews...

"I don't think there will be any support." Ye Xiao smiled and said, "What we have are all here, over one hundred thousand men. No matter what we choose, hold the defense or go out for attack, our hope lays on these men. Twenty percent chance we will get support though. The chance relies on my father. If only he withdraws from the grassland and comes up here and save us!"

"There is no other options." Ye Xiao stood up. "No matter what, we got a victory today. Our men are highly spirited. Let's just have some rests, wait and see what Wenren Jianyin will do. If things go desperate, I will just destroy the mountain peaks on two sides. We can always create opportunity. A man can never die for holding his pee!"

"Destroy the mountain..." Zhu Chenggong's eyeballs nearly popped out again.

Why again? Because his eyes had popped out because of surprise many times in the day!

He nearly freaked out!

[My heavens! Listen to you... You really are good at big talks...]

[The only reason why their one million troops still can't take Iron Peak down is that there are two great tall mountains on the two sides!]

[They made two natural shields for us!]

[The two mountains made Iron Peak!]

[The sides facing Kingdom of Lan-Feng of the two mountains had become cliffs because of hard works of Kingdom of Chen!]

[From top to bottom, it was sharp like cut by knife!]

[It is hundreds meters high. No ordinary men can get cross the mountains. That is why we can hold them outside after all the time we spent here.]

[Iron Peak tower is right between the two mountains. The two great mountains make this place Iron Peak.]

[If the two mountains are gone, there will be no Iron Peak, the strongest shield of the Kingdom of Chen!]

[It takes god knows how many lives and resources for the kingdom to finally have this Iron Peak!]

[Give the kingdom dozens of years more, the Iron Peak will be built into a bigger building. It will fully connect to the mountains and cut all paths from outside the wall!]

[Now, Commander Ye actually wants to destroy the two mountains?]

[And you call it creating opportunity? You are destroying our opportunity!]

Zhu Chenggong was scared the hell out!

"Crazy! Are you crazy, Commander?" Zhu Chenggong shouted, "The two mountains are our strongest shield! You want to destroy them? If you do, you will be a sinner in the history!"

Ye Xiao blandly spoke, "Of course I know it is our strongest shield! The problem here is that we have much less men than Wenren Jianyin. We can never defeat his one million troops. This Iron Peak will be broken. He could sacrifice as many as it needs to break it! That is the truth and we have to face it!"

Zhu Chenggong's face was twisted because of pain.

As Ye Xiao said, it was the truth, and they couldn't ignore it. Zhu Chenggong knew it would only be fooling himself not to face it!

"If things truly go to that where we don't like to see, I will destroy the two mountains. Even though it won't kill all his million troops, hundreds of thousands of his men will die. It will hurt him. What is it that you think is wrong in my plan? Commander Wu sacrificed himself to lure the enemy. My plan is no different than his!"

"Tell me, if we won't do that and also we can't hold Iron Peak ourselves, what then? Iron Peak will be their strongest shield instead of ours! Now tell me, what makes me wrong then? And what makes you right?"

"Who is right?" Zhu Chenggong was stunned.

In any aspect, he knew Ye Xiao was telling the truth. However, deep in his heart, he didn't want to destroy the place he had worked so hard to protect. If Iron Peak fell, his heart would fall with it too..

Ye Xiao was lost in thoughts, but Wenren Jianyin was also worrying. He was mad and enraged.

He kept frowning all the time!

After all, the Kingdom of Lan-Feng lost the battle. He lost a big one!

Over one million men army was run over by only one hundred

thousand men in their own camp!

It was the biggest disgrace in his life.

He didn't know what to do with his enemies after his army got such a huge loss.

He had to watch them return to their place casually!

The Kingdom of Lan-Feng had lost several times more men than Kingdom of Chen this time!

It freaked Wenren Jianyin out!

"There are so many cultivators in Kingdom of Lan-Feng, and we just can't get some martial artists who are better than those men? Do we have to sacrifice several times more men to get them down? Is it a victory?"

"We had more men. We set up ambush. We have so many Sky Origin Stage cultivators working together and we destroyed two of their squads. Only two of our eight Sky Origin Stage cultivators made it back. Is it a victory? The men we put down are the regular figures of them! Should I feel happy that luckily my men didn't get on Ning Biluo, Zhao Pingtian, Song Jue... If our men encountered these men, none of them would survive! Not to mention killing the enemies!"

...

# Table of Contents

[Realms In The Firmament](#)

[Synopsis](#)

[Copyright](#)

[Chapter 601: Last Joy; Take Charge!](#)

[Chapter 602: Disgusting!](#)

[Chapter 603: Thunder Up](#)

[Chapter 604: Inconceivable!](#)

[Chapter 605: The King's Fury!](#)

[Chapter 606: Strange !](#)

[Chapter 607: Memory Revival](#)

[Chapter 608: Lots of Medicine!](#)

[Chapter 609: Dancing Egg!](#)

[Chapter 610: So Many Dan Beads!](#)

[Chapter 611: Super Agerasia Dan!](#)

[Chapter 612: Burn the Incense for Help!](#)

[Chapter 613: Take You Out](#)

[Chapter 614: Different Aesthetic Standards](#)

[Chapter 615: Here He Comes](#)

[Chapter 616: Reveal Your Secret](#)

[Chapter 617: Talk Like Controlling the Kingdom](#)

[Chapter 618: Unbelievably Wise](#)

[Chapter 619: Solve Your Problem!](#)

[Chapter 620: Slip of Tongue?](#)

[Chapter 621: My Woman!](#)

[Chapter 622: Three Days](#)

[Chapter 623: Yin Yang Soul Dan!](#)

[Chapter 624: Leave With Joy!](#)

[Chapter 625: Why Sigh?](#)

[Chapter 626: Hammer and Sword](#)

[Chapter 627: Dare Not to Bet!](#)

[Chapter 628: Nine Turns Heart Dan!](#)

[Chapter 629: You Will Have It Too!](#)

[Chapter 630: Keep the Regret](#)

[Chapter 631: Marching in the Grassland!](#)

[Chapter 632: Lethal Ambush!](#)

[Chapter 633: Settle the North](#)

- [Chapter 634: World Memorial Ceremony \(1\)](#)
- [Chapter 635: World Memorial Ceremony \(2\)](#)
- [Chapter 636: World Memorial Ceremony \(3\)](#)
- [Chapter 637: Farewell!](#)
- [Chapter 638: Eternal Legend!](#)
- [Chapter 639: Reward Warrant Back](#)
- [Chapter 640: All Kinds of Assassins!](#)
- [Chapter 641: Boundless Lake](#)
- [Chapter 642: Quit the Martial World!](#)
- [Chapter 643: Kill Me! End It!](#)
- [Chapter 644: All Ended](#)
- [Chapter 645: Convinced!](#)
- [Chapter 646: Witness](#)
- [Chapter 647: A Bunch of Wastes](#)
- [Chapter 648: Get the Money!](#)
- [Chapter 649: I Am Taking It...](#)
- [Chapter 650: Ashamed](#)
- [Chapter 651: Quit the Martial World](#)
- [Chapter 652: Preparation](#)
- [Chapter 653: Different People Have Different Aspirations](#)
- [Chapter 654: Pull up a Seedling to Help It Grow](#)
- [Chapter 655: Lots of Impeachments](#)
- [Chapter 656: Merits and Demerits; Wuji's First Show](#)
- [Chapter 657: There Is No Story without Coincidences](#)
- [Chapter 658: By Accident](#)
- [Chapter 659: Man's Responsibility](#)
- [Chapter 660: Qing-Yun Realm Cultivators](#)
- [Chapter 661: Tough Fight](#)
- [Chapter 662: Reverse Knock of Golden Soul Blast](#)
- [Chapter 663: Impregnable](#)
- [Chapter 664: Failed at the End!](#)
- [Chapter 665: Demon Showed Up!](#)
- [Chapter 666: Bing-Er? Xuan Bing?](#)
- [Chapter 667: Freak Out!](#)
- [Chapter 668: I Am Off!](#)
- [Chapter 669: Your Life; In My Arms!](#)
- [Chapter 670: Who Are You?](#)
- [Chapter 671: Is It Still Necessary to Ask Who?](#)
- [Chapter 672: Soul Power!](#)

[Chapter 673: Recommended Ye Xiao!](#)  
[Chapter 674: Ye Xiao! Commander Ye!](#)  
[Chapter 675: Military Law; White Flag!](#)  
[Chapter 676: Unwavering Slaughter!](#)  
[Chapter 677: Marching For Battle](#)  
[Chapter 678: I Faint!](#)  
[Chapter 679: Iron Peak](#)  
[Chapter 680: Tragic War](#)  
[Chapter 681: Imposing Manner of the Losing Army!](#)  
[Chapter 682: It Is Him?](#)  
[Chapter 683: Sincerely Convinced!](#)  
[Chapter 684: Who Is Lord Xiao?](#)  
[Chapter 685: Taboo!](#)  
[Chapter 686: Meeting](#)  
[Chapter 687: It's You!](#)  
[Chapter 688: Who Are You?](#)  
[Chapter 689: Kick the Camps!](#)  
[Chapter 690: Baffling Battle!](#)  
[Chapter 691: Multiple Attempts of Assassination!](#)  
[Chapter 692: Lightning Strike](#)  
[Chapter 693: Glorious!](#)  
[Chapter 694: Have to Hurry!](#)  
[Chapter 695: Twenty Sharp Daggers!](#)  
[Chapter 696: Tough Fights in Two Sides!](#)  
[Chapter 697: Ashes to Ashes!](#)  
[Chapter 698: Cross the Battle!](#)  
[Chapter 699: Not Enough Men!](#)  
[Chapter 700: Headache in Both Sides!](#)